JOSEPH ANDREWS.

Vol. I.

A



HISTORY

OFTHE

ADVENTURES

OF

JOSEPH ANDREWS,

And his Friend

Mr ABRAHAM ADAMS.
IN TWO VOLUMES.

Written in Imitation of

The Manner of CERVANTES, Author of Don QUIXOTE.

By HENRY FIELDING, Esq.

VOLUME the FIRST.

LONDON:

Printed for B. LONG, and T. PRIDDEN.
M. DCC. LXXIII.

SIN ON MARKET AND AND . THE THE O MOTHERS By HERRY FIFTED CO. E.C.

fi



PREFACE.

As it is possible the mere English readermay have a different idea of romance from the author of these little volumes *; and may consequently expect a kind of entertainment not to be found, nor which was even intended, in the following pages; it may not be improper to premise a few words concerning this kind of writing, which I do not remember to have seen hitherto attempted in our language.

The Epic, as well as the DRAMA, is divided into Tragedy and Comedy. Homer, who was the father of this species of poetry, gave us a pattern of both these, though that of the latter kind is entirely lost; which Aristotle tells us, bore the same relation to Comedy which his Iliad bears to Tragedy. And perhaps, that we have no more instances of it among the writers of antiquity, is owing to the loss of this great pattern, which, had it survived, would have found its imitators equally with the other poems of this great original.

And farther, as this poetry may be Tragic or Comic, I will not scruple to say it may be

Joseph Andrews was originally published in two-volumes 12mo.

likewise either in verse or prose: for though it wants one particular, which the critic enumerates in the constituent parts of an epic poem, namely metre; yet, when any kind of writing contains all its other parts, such as fable, action, characters, sentiments, and diction, and is desicient in metre only; it seems, I think, reasonable to refer it to the epic; at least, as no critic hath thought proper to range it under any other head, or to assign it a particular name to itself.

Thus the Telemachus of the Archibishop of Cambray appears to me of the epic kind, as well as the Odyssey of Homer; indeed, it is much fairer and more reasonable to give it a name common with that species from which it differs only in a single instance, than to confound it with those which it resembles in no other. Such are those voluminous works, commonly called Romances, namely, Clelia, Cleopatra, Astræa, Cassandra, the Grand Cyrus, and innumerable others, which contain, as I apprehend, very little instruction or entertainment.

th

in

is

of

COL

eve

um

mil

as i

to !

we.

Now a comic romance is a comic epic-poem in profe; differing from comedy, as the ferious epic from tragedy: its action being more extended and comprehensive; containing a much larger circle of incidents, and introducing a greater variety of characters. It differs from

the serious romance in its fable and action, in this; that as in the one these are grave and folemn, fo in the other they are light and ridiculous: it differs in its characters, by introducing persons of inferior rank, and confequently of inferior manners, whereas the grave romance fets the highest before us; lastly, in its fentiments and diction, by preferving the ludicrous instead of the sublime. In the diction, I think, burlefque itself may be fometimes admitted; of which many instances will occur in this work, as in the description of the battles, and some other places, not neceffary to be pointed out to the classical readers; for whose entertainment those parodies or burlesque imitations are chiefly calculated.

But though we have fometimes admitted this in our diction, we have carefully excluded it from our fentiments and characters: for there it is never properly introduced, unless in writings of the burlesque kind, which this is not intended to be. Indeed, no two species of writing can differ more widely than the comic and the burlesque; for as the latter is ever the exhibition of what is monstrous and unnatural, and where our delight, if we examine it, arises from the surprising absurdity, as in appropriating the manners of the highest to the lowest, or econverso; so in the former we should ever confine ourselves strictly to na-

n

IS

-

h

a

m

ture, from the just imitation of which will flow all the pleafure we can this way convey to a fenfible reader. And perhaps there is one reason why a comic writer should of all others be the least excused for deviating from nature, fince it may not be always fo easy for a ferious poet to meet with the great and the admirable; but life every where furnishes an accurate observer with the ridiculous.

I have hinted this little concerning burlesque; because I have often heard that name given to performances, which have been truly of the comic kind, from the author's having fometimes admitted it in his diction only; which, as it is the dress of poetry, doth, like the dress of men, establish characters, (the one of the whole poem, and the other of the whole man) in vulgar opinion, beyond any of their greater excellencies: but farely, a certain drollery in stile, where the characters and fentiments are perfectly natural, no more conflitutes the burlefque, than an empty pomp and dignity of words, where every thing else is mean and low, can entitle any performance to the appellation of the true fublime.

W

pe

ca

lei

COL

eye

ber

fear

the

is to

tions

its p

No

And I apprehend, my Lord Shaftefbury's opinion of mere burlesque agrees with mine, when he afferts, there is no fuch thing to be found in the writings of the ancients. perhaps I have less abhorrence than he pro-

fesses for it: and that not because I have had some little success on the stage this way; but rather, as it contributes more to exquisite mirth and laughter than any other; and these are probably more wholesome physic for the mind, and conduce better to purge away spleen, melancholy, und ill affections, than is generally imagined. Nay, I will appeal to common observation, whether the same companies are not found more full of good humour and benevolence, after they have been sweetened for two or three hours with entertainments of this kind, than when soured by a tragedy or a grave lecture.

But to illustrate all this by another science, in which, perhaps, we shall see the distinction more clearly and plainly: let us examine the works of a comic history-painter, with those performances which the Italians calls Caricatura; where we shall find the true excellence of the former to consist in the exactest copying of nature; insomuch that a judicious eye instantly rejects any thing outre; any liberty which the painter hath taken with the features of that alma mater.— Whereas in the Caricatura we allow all licence. Its aim is to exhibit monsters, not men; and all distortions and exaggerations whatever are within its proper province.

e

25

e, be^

ut

0-

Now what Caricatura is in painting, Bur-

lesque is in writing; and in the same manner the comic writer and painter correlate to each other. And here I shall observe, that as in the former the painter seems to have the advantage, so it is in the latter infinitely on the side of the writer: for the Monstrous is much easier to paint than discribe, and the Ridiculous to describe than paint.

And tho' perhaps this latter species doth not in either science so strongly affect and agitate the muscles as the other: yet it will be owned, I believe, that a more rational and useful pleasure arises to us from it. He who should call the ingenious Hogarth a burlesque painter, would, in my opinion, do him very little honour: for sure it is much easier, much less the subject of admiration, to paint a man with a nofe, or any other feature of a prepofterous fize, or to expose him in some absurd or monstrous attitude, than to express the affections of men on canvas. It hath been thought a vast commendation of a painter, to fay his figures feem to breathe; but furely it is a much greater and nobler applause, that they appear to think.

But to return——The Ridiculous only, as I have before faid, falls within my province in the prefent work.——Nor will some explanation of this word be thought impertinent by the reader, if he considers how wonderfully

it hath been mistaken, even by writers who have profes'd it: for to what but such a mistake, can we attribute the many attempts to ridicule the blackest villainies; and what is yet worse, the most dreadful calamities? What could exceed the abfurdity of an author, who should write the comedy of Nero, with the merry incident of ripping up his mother's belly? or what would give a greater shock to humanity, than an attempt to expose the miseries of poverty and destress to ridicule? And yet, the reader will not want much learning to fuggest such instances to himself.

Besides, it may seem remarkable, that Aristotle, who is so fond and free of definitions, hath not thought proper to define the Ridiculous. Indeed, where he tells it is proper to comedy, he hath remarked that villainy is not its object: but he hath not as I remember positively afferted what is. Nor doth the Abbe Bellegrade, who has written a treatife on this subject, tho' he shews us many species of it, once

trace it to its fountain.

h

.

e

d

10

ne

rv

ch

an of-

ird

af-

een

, to

v it

hat

, as

ince

ex-

nent

fally

The only fource of the true Ridiculous (as it appears to me) is affectation. But tho' it arises from one spring only; when we confider the infinite streams into which this one branches, we shall presently cease to admire at the copious field it affords to an observer, Now affectation proceeds from one of these

two causes; vanity or hypocrify: for as vanity puts us on affecting false characters, in order to purchase applause; so hypocrify sets us on an endeavour to avoid censure, by concealing. our vices under an appearance of their opposite virtues. And tho' these two causes are often confounded, (for there is some difficulty in diflinguishing them) yet as they proceed from very different motives, fo they are as clearly distinct in their operations: for indeed, the affectation which arises from vanity is nearer to truth than the other; as it hath not that violent repugnancy of nature to struggle with, which that of the hypocrite hath. It may be likewise noted, that affectation doth not imply an absolute negation of those qualities which are affected: and therefore, tho' when it proceeds from hypocrify, it be nearly allied to deceit; yet when it comes from vanity only; it partakes of the nature of oftentation. For instance, the affectation of liberality in a vain man, differs visibly from the same affectation in the avaricious: for though the vain man is not what he would appear, or hath not the virtue he affects, to the degree he would be thought to have it; yet it fits less aukwardly on him than on the avaricious man, who is the very reverse of what he would feem to be.

From the discovery of this affectation arises

di

the Ridiculous—which always strikes the reader with surprize and pleasure; and that in a higher and stronger degree when the affectation arises from hypocrify, than when from vanity: for, to discover any one to be the exact reverse of what he affects, is more surprising, and consequently more ridiculous, than to find him a little deficient in the quality he desires the reputation of. I might observe, that our Ben Johnson, who of all men understood the Ridiculous the best, hath chiefly used the hypocritical affectation.

C

IS

18

ot

6

[t

th

a -

o'

ly

m

n-

e-

he

gh

ar,

le-

it ri-

he

[es

Now from affectation only, the misfortunes and calamities of life, or the imperfections of nature, may become the objects of ridicule. Surely he hath a very ill-framed mind, who can look on ugliness, infirmity, or poverty, as ridiculous in themselves: nor do I believe any man living, who meets a dirty fellow rideing through the streets in a cart, is struck with an idea of the Ridiculous from it; but if he should see the same figure descend from his coach and fix, or bolt from his chair with his hat under his arm, he would then begin to laugh, and with justice. In the same manner, were we to enter a poor house, and behold a wretched family shivering with cold, and languishing with hunger, it would not incline us to laughter (at least we must have very diabodical natures, if it would:) but should we dif-

VOL. I. E

cover there a grate, instead of coals, adorned with flowers, empty plate or china dishes on the fideboard, or any other affectation of riches and finery either on their persons or in their furniture; we might then indeed be excused for ridiculing fo fantaflical an appearance. Much less are natural imperfections the objects of derision: but when ugliness aims at the applause of beauty, or lameness endeavours to display agility; it is then that these unfortunate circumstances, which at first moved our compassion, tend only to raise our mirth.

The poet carries this very far;

None are for being what they are in fault,

But for not being what they would be thought.'

Where if the metre would fuffer the word Ridiculous to close the first line, the thought would be rather more proper. Great vices are the proper objects of our detestation, smaller faults of our pity: but affectation appears to me the only true fource of the Ridiculous.

But perhaps it may be objected to me, that I have against my own rules introduced vices. and of a very black kind, in this work. To which I shall answer: first, that it is very difficult to pursue a series of human actions, and keep clear from them. Secondly, that the

17

fe

th

an

vices to be found here, are rather the accidental consequences of some human frailty or foible, than causes habitually existing in the mind. Thirdly, that they are never set forth as the objects of ridicule, but detestation. Fourthly, that they are never the principal figure at that time on the scene; and lastly, they never produce the intended evil.

S

r-

ır

ord

ght ices

nal-

ears

ous.

that

To

dif-

and

t the

Having thus distinguished Joseph Andrews from the productions of romance-writers on the one hand, and burlesque-writers on the other, and given some few very short hints (for I intended no more) of this species of writing, which I have affirmed to be hitherto unattempted in our language; I shall leave to my good-natured reader to apply my piece to my observations, and will detain him no longer than with a word concerning the characters in this work.

And here I folemnly protest, I have no intention to vilify or asperse any one: for tho' everything is copied from the book of nature, and scarce a character or action produced which I have not taken from my own observations and experience; yet I have used the utmost care to obscure the persons by such different circumstances, degrees and colours, that it will be impossible to guess at them with any degree of certainty; and if it ever hap-

B 2

pens otherwise, it is only where the failure characterized is so minute, that it is a soible only, which the party himself may laugh at as

well as any other.

As to the character of Adams, as it is the most glaring in the whole, so I conceive it is not to be found in any book now extant. It is designed a character of perfect simplicity; and as the goodness of his heart will recommend him to the good-natured, so I hope it will excuse me to the gentlemen of his cloth, for whom, while they are worthy of their facred order, no man can possibly have a greater respect. They will therefore excuse me, notwithstanding the low adventures in which he is engaged, that I have made him a clergyman; since no other office could have given him so many opportunities of displaying his worthy inclinations.

CONTENTS

OFTHE

FIRST VOLUME.

BOOK FIRST.

C H A P. I.

O F writing lives in general, and particularly of Pamela; with a word by the bye of Colley Cibber and others. Page 25

C H A P. II.

n

3

Of Mr Joseph Andrews his birth, parentage, education, and great endowments; with word or two concerning ancestors. 28

C H A P. III.

Of Mr Abraham Adams the curate, Mrs Slipflop the chambermaid, and others. 32

C H A P. IV.

What happened after their journey to London.

C H A P. V.

The death of Sir Thomas Booby, with the affectionate and mournful behaviour of his B 3

CONTENTS. xvi widow, and the great purity of Joseph Andrews. 42 H A P. VI. How Joseph Andrews writ a letter to his fifter Pamela. 46 C H A P. VII. Sayings of wife men. A dialogue between the Lady and her maid; and a panegyric, orrather satire, on the passion of love, in the Sublime Style. 52 C H A P. VIII.

On which, after some very fine writing, the history goes on, and relates an interview between the Lady and Joseph; where the latter hath set an example, which we despair of seeing sollowed by his sex, in this vicious age.

SA

The

P

61

po

A p

C H A P. IX.

What passed between the Lady and Mrs Slipflop, in which we prophecy there are some
strokes which every one will not truly comprehend at the first reading.

66

C H A P. X.

Joseph writes another letter; His transactions with Mr Peter Pounce, &c. with his departure from Lady Boohy.

C. H. A. P. XI.
Of several new matters not expected. 76

CONTENTS. xvii

C H A P. XII.

Containing many furprising adventures which Joseph Andrews met with on the road, scarce credible to those who have never travelled in a stage-coach.

C H A P. XIII.

ie

200-

be

2

he

he

de-

his

58

lip-

0111-

66

fac-

with 73

76

What happened to Joseph during his sickness at the inn, with the curious discourse between him and Mr Barnabas the parson of the parish.

C H A P. XIV.

Being very full of adventures, which succeeded each other at the inn.

C H A P. XV.

Shewing how Mrs Tow-wouse was a little molified: and how officious Mr Barnabas and the surgeon were to prosecute the thies: with a differtation accounting for their zeal, and that of many other persons not mentioned in this history.

C H A P. XVI.

The escape of the thief. Mr Adams's disappointment. The arrival of two very extraordinary personages, and the introduction of parson Adams to parson Barnabas. 114

C H A P. XVII.

A pleasant discourse between the two parsons

xviii C O N T E N T S.

and the Bookseller, which was broke off by an unlucky accident happening in the inn, which produced a dialogue between Mrs Tow-wouse and her maid, of no gentle kind.

C H A P. XVIII.

The history of Betty the chambermaid, and an account of what occasioned the violent seene in the preceding chapter. 138

BOOK SECOND.

C H A P. I.

OF divisions in authors.

in authors. 144

1

C

IVE

2

C H A P. II.

A furprizing instance of Mr Adams's short
memory, with the unfortunate consequences
which it brought on Joseph.

148

C H A P. III.

The opinion of two lawyers concerning the same gentleman, with Mr Adams's enquiry into the religion of his host. 156

C H A P. IV.

The history of Leonora: or, The unfortunate jilt. 167

CHAP. V.

A dreadful quarrel which happened at the inn where the company dined; with its bloody consequences to Mr Adams. 195

CONTENTS. xix

C H A P. VI.

Conclusion of the unfortunate jilt. 209

C H A P. VII.

69

nn.

Irs

29

and

ent

138

144

bort

nces 148

fame

into

inate

167

e inn

loody 195 A very short chapter, in which Parson Adams went a great way. 217

C H A P. VIII.

A notable dissertation by Mr Abraham Adams;
wherein that gentleman appears in a political light.

221

In which the gentleman descants on bravery and heroic virtue, till an unlucky accident puts an end to the discourse. 227

C H A P. X.

Giving an account of the strange catastrophe of the preceding adventure, which drew poor Adams into fresh calamities; and who the woman was who owed the preservation of her chastity to his victorious arm.

235

C H A P. XI.
What happened to them while before the Justice. A chapter very full of learning. 243

C H A P. XII.

A very delightful adventure, as well to the persons concerned, as to the good-natured reader.

255

XX CONTENTS.

C. H A P. XIII.

A dissertation concerning high people and low people, with Mrs Slipslop's departure in no very good temper of mind, and the evil plight in which she left Adams and his company.

C H A P. XIV.

An interview between parson Adams and parson Trulliber. 272

C H A P. XV.

An adventure, the consequence of a new instance which Parson Adams gave of his forgetfulness. 283

C H A P. XVI.

Avery curious adventure, in which Mr Adams gave a much greater instance of the honest simplicity of his heart than of his experience in the ways of this world. 288

C H A P. XVII.

A dialogue between Mr Abraham Adams and bis host, which, by the disagreement in their opinions, seemed to threaten an unlucky catastrophe, had it not been timely prevented by the return of the lovers.



The

HISTORY

OFTHE

ADVENTURES

OF

Joseph Andrews, and his Friend Mr Abraham Adams.

Written in Imitation of

The manner of CERVANTES, Author of Don QUIXOTE.

no ght

62

ar-272

ful-283

lams onest ience 288

s and their ky cacented 302



is for Hulling is an th

are no gre to fen no and ter mo

ROOK FIRST.

C H A P. I.

of writing tives in general, and particularly of Pamela; with a word by he bye of Colley Cibber and others.

T is a trite but true observation, that examples work more forcibly on the mind than precepts: and if this be just in what is odious and blameable, it is more strongly so in what is amiable and praise-worthy. Here emulation most effectually operates upon us, and inspires our imitation in an irressibile manner. A good man therefore is a standing lesson to all his acquaintance, and of far greater use in that narrow circle than a good book.

But as it often happens that the best men are but little known, and consequently cannot extend the usefulness of their examples a great way; the writer may be called in aid to spread their history farther, and to present the amiable pictures to those who have not the happiness of knowing the originals; and so, by communicating such valuable patterns to the world, he may, perhaps, do a more extensive service to mankind, than the

Vol. I. C

person whose life originally afforded the

pattern.

In this light I have always regarded those biographers who have recorded the actions of great and worthy persons of both sexes. Not to mention those ancient writers which of late days are little read, being written in obfolete, and, as they are generally thought, unintelligible languages, fuch as Plutarch, Nepos, and others which I heard of in my youth; our own language affords many of excellent use and instruction, finely calculated to fow the feeds of virtue in youth, and very eafy to be comprehended by perfons of moderate capacity. Such are the history of John the Great, who, by his brave and heroic actions against men of large and athletic bodies, obtained the glorious appellation of the Giant-killer: that of an Earl of Warwick, whose Christian name was Guy; the lives of Argalus and Parthenia; and, above all, the history of those feven worthy persopages the Champions of Christendom. In all these, delight is mixed with instruction, and the reader is almost as much improved as entertained.

de

th

fet

pr

tio

ar

Wit

inf

wh

But I pass by these and many others, to mention two books lately published, which represent an admirable pattern of the amiable in either sex. The former of these,



which deals in male virtue, was written by the great person himself, who lived the life he hath recorded, and is by many thought to have lived fuch a life only in order to write it; the other, communicated to us by an historian who borrows his lights, as the common method is, from authentic papers and records. The reader, I believe, already conjectures I mean the lives of Mr Colley Cibber, and of Mrs Pamela Andrews. How artfully doth the former, by infinuating that he escaped being promoted to the highest stations in church and state, teach us a contempt of worldly grandeur! how strongly doth he inculcate an absolute submission to our fuperiors! Lastly, how completely doth he arm us against so uneasy, so wretched a passion as the fear of shame! how clearly doth he expose the emptiness and vanity of that phantom, reputation!

f

d

f

of

2-

ic

of

r-

ne

ve

o-

all

nd

n-

to

ich

mi-

efe,

What the female readers are taught by the memoirs of Mrs Andrews, is fo well fet forth in the excellent essays or letters prefixed to the second and subsequent editions of that work, that it would be here a needless repetition. The authentic history with which I now present the public, is an instance of the great good that book is likely to do, and of the prevalence of example which I have just observed: since it will ap-

pear that it was by keeping the excellent pattern of his fifter's virtues before his eyes, that Mr Joseph Andrews was chiefly enabled to preserve his purity in the midst of such great temptations. I shall only add, that this character of male chastity, though doubtless as desirable and becoming in one part of the human species as in the other, is almost the only virtue which the great apologist hath not given himself for the sake of giving the example to his readers.

C H A P. II.

Of Mr Joseph Andrews his birth, parentage, education, and great endowments: with a worder two concerning ancestors.

R Joseph Andrews, the hero of our ensuing history, was esteemed to be the only son of Gaffer and Gammer Andrews, and brother to the illustrious Pamela, whose virtue is at present so famous. As to his ancestors, we have searched with great diligence, but little success; being unable to trace them farther than his great-grandsather, who, as an elderly person in the parish remembers to have heard his father say, was an excellent cudgel-player. Whether he had any ancestors before this, we must leave to the opinion of our curious reader, finding

a

or de fin

In as an year

bui for

per

nothing of fufficient certainty to rely on. However, we cannot omit inferting an epitaph which an ingenious friend of ours hathcommunicated:

Stay, traveller, for underneath this pew
Lyes fast asleep that merry man Andrew.
When the last day's great fun shall gild the skies.
Then he shall from his tomb get up and rife.
Be merry while thou can'st: for surely thou
Shall shortly be as sad as he is now.

The words are almost out of the stone with antiquity. But it is needless to observe, that Andrew here is writ without an s, and is, besides, a Christian name. My friend moreover conjectures this to have been the sounder of that sect of laughing philosophers,

fince called Merry Andrews.

3-

0

t

0

.

h

IS

0

To wave therefore a circumstance, which, though mentioned in conformity to the exact rules of biography, is not greatly material; I proceed to things of more consequence. Indeed, it is sufficiently certain, that he had as many ancestors as the best man living; and perhaps, if we look five or fix hundred years backwards, might be related to some persons of very great figure at present, whose ancestors within half the last century ar buried in as great obscurity. But suppose, for argument's sake, we should admit that

C 3

he had no ancestors at all, but had sprung up, according to the modern phrase, out of a dunghill, as the Athenians pretended they themselves did from the earth, would not this Autokopros * have been justly entitled to all the praise arising from his own virtues? Would it not be hard, that a man who hath no ancesters, should therefore be rendered incapable of acquiring honour, when we fee fo many who have no virtues, enjoying the honour of their forefathers? At ten years old (by which time his education was advanced to writing and reading) he was bound an apprentice, according to the statute, to Sir Thomas Booby, an uncle of Mr Booby's by the father's fide. Thomas having then an estate in his own hands, the young Andrews was at first employed in what in the country they call keeping birds. His office was to perform the part the ancients affigned to the god Priapus, which deity the moderns call by the name of Jack-o'Lent: but his voice being fo extremely mufical, that it rather allured the birds than terrified them, he was foon transplanted from the fields into the dog-kennel, where he was placed under the huntiman, and made what sportsmen term

ti

fe

fi

bo

ca

ga

W

to

tio

fel ful

fuc

cha

tha ven

^{*} In English, sprung from a dunghill,

1

e

,

1-

(;

0

le ir

'n

n-.

Ili

m

bo

by

e-

al--

ras

he

the

rm

Whipper-in. But this place likewise the fweetness of his voice disqualified him; the dogs preferring the melody of his chiding to all the alluring notes of the huntiman, who foon became fo incenfed at it, that he defired Sir Thomas to provide otherwise for him; and constantly laid every fault the dogs were at, to the account of the poor boy, who was now transplanted to the stable. Here he foon gave proofs of his strength and agility, beyond his years, and constantly rode the most spirited and vicious horses to water, with an intrepidity that furprized every one. While he was in this station, he rode feveral races for Sir Thomas, and this with fuch expertness and fuccess, that the neighbouring gentlemen frequently folicited the knight, to permit little Joey (for fo he was called) to ride their matches. gamesters, before they laid their money, always inquired which horse little Joey was to ride; and the bets were rather proportioned by the rider than by the horse himfelf; especially after he had scornfully refused a confiderable bribe to play booty on fuch an occasion. This extremely raised his character, and fo pleafed the Lady Booby, that she defired to have him (being now feventeen years of age) for her own foot-boy. Joey was now preferred from the stable

to attend on his lady, to go on her errands, fland behind her chair, wait at her tea-table, and carry her prayer-book to church; at which place, his voice gave him an opportunity of distinguishing himself by singing psalms; he behaved likewise in every other respect so well at divine service, that it recommended him to the notice of Mr Abraham Adams the curate, who took an opportunity one day, as he was drinking a cup of ale in Sir Thomas's kitchen, to ask the young man several questions concerning religion; with his answers to which he was wonderfully pleased.

C H A P. III.

Of Mr Abraham Adams the curate, Mrs. Slipflop the chambermaid, and others.

R Abraham Adams was an excellent scholar. He was a perfect master of the Greek and Latin languages; to which he added a great share of knowledge in the Oriental tongues, and could read and translate French, Italian, and Spanish. He had applied many years to the most severe study, and had treasured up a fund of learning rarely to be met with in a university. He was besides a man of good sense, good parts, and good nature; but was at the same time

br ch Co as wh par his

bee

and

hav

thoi hum H they made panie recon

age of fome which great country wife a

lt v

as entirely ignorant of the ways of this world. as an infant just entered into it could possibly be. As he had never any intention to deceive, fo he never suspected such a design in others. He was generous, friendly, and brave to an excess; but simplicity was his characteristic: he did, no more than Mr Colley Cibber, apprehend any fuch paffions. as malice and envy to exist in mankind: which was indeed less remarkable in a country parson, than in a gentleman who hath past his life behind the scenes, a place which hath. been feldom thought the school of innocence; and where a very little observation would have convinced the great apologist, that those passions have a real existence in the human mind:

f

nt

of

ch

he

nf-

ad

ly,

ng

He

rts,

me

His virtue, and his other qualifications, as they rendered him equal to his office; fo they made him an agreeable and valuable companion, and had fo much endeared and well recommended him to a bifhop, that, at the age of fifty, he was provided with a hand-tome income of twenty-three pounds a-year: which, however, he could not make any great figure with; because he lived in a dear country, and was a little incumbered with a wife and fix children.

It was this gentleman, who having, as I have faid, observed the fingular devotion of

34 THE ADVENTURES OF

young Andrews, had found means to queflion him concerning feveral particulars; as how many books were there in the New Testament? which were they? how many chapters they contained? and such like; to all which, Mr Adams privately said, he answered much better than Sir Thomas, or two other neighbouring justices of the peace

fu

bo

of

wl

me

gre

not

hav

led

· h

6 P

· di

· he

· W

· de

all

6 01

W

· I ·

go.

ten

mu

Ac

mas (

could probably have done.

Mr Adams was wonderfully folicitous to know at what time, and by what opportunity the youth became acquainted with these matters: Joey told him, that he had very early learnt to read and write by the goodness of his father, who, though he had not interest enough to get him into a charityschool, because a cousin of his father's landlord did not vote on the right fide for a church-warden in a borough town, yet had been himself at the expence of fixpence aweek for his learning. He told him likewife, that ever fince he was in Sir Thomas's family, he had employed all his hours of leifure in reading good books; that he had read the Bible, the Whole Duty of Man, and Thomas a Kempis; and that, as often as he could, without being perceived, he had studied a great good book which lay open in the hallwindow, where he had read, ' as how the devil carried away half a church in fermonstime, without hurting one of the congregation; and as how a field of corn ran away down a hill with all the trees upon it, and covered another man's meadow.' This fufficiently affured Mr Adams, that the good book meant could be no other than Baker's Chronicle.

e-

as

W

ny

to

he

or

ice

to

ity

refe

ery

od-

not

rity-

and-

or a

had

e a-

wife,

mily,

re in

1 the

omas

ould,

ied 2

hall-

w the

mon-

The curate, furprised to find such instances of industry and application in a young man, who had never met with the least encouragement, asked him, if he did not extremely regret the want of a liberal education, and the not having been born of parents who might have indulged his talents and defire of knowledge? To which he answered, ' He hoped ' he had profited fomewhat better from the books he had read, than to lament his con-' dition in this world. That, for his part, ' he was perfectly content with the state to ' which he was called; that he should endeavour to improve his talent, which was ' all required of him, but not repine at his 'own lot, nor envy those of his betters,' ' Well faid, my lad,' replied the curate, ' and' 'I wish some who have read many more ' good books, nay, and fome who have writ-' ten good books themselves, had profited so ' much by them.'

Adams had no nearer access to Sir Thomas or my lady, than through the waitinggentlewoman: for Sir Thomas was too apt to estimate men merely by their dress or fortune: and my lady was a woman of gaiety, who had been bleffed with a town education, and never spoke of any of her country neighbours by any other appellation than that of the Brutes. They both regarded the curate as a kind of domestic only, belonging to the parfon of the parifh, who was at this time at variance with the knight; for the parson had for many years lived in a constant state of civil war, or, which is perhaps as bad, of civil law, with Sir Thomas himself and the tenants of his manor. The foundation of this quarrel was a modus, by fetting which afide, an advantage of feveral shillings per annum would have accrued to the rector: but he had not yet been able to accomplish his purpole; and had reaped hitherto nothing better from the fuits than the pleafure (which he used indeed frequently to fay was no small one) of reflecting that he had utterly undone many of the poor tenants, though he had at the fame time greatly impoverished himself.

d

n

11

ea

6

Mrs Slipslop the waiting gentlewoman, being herself the daughter of a curate, preferved some respect for Adams; she professed great regard for his learning, and would frequently dispute with him on points of theology: but always infifted on a deference

to be paid to her understanding, as she had been frequently at London, and knew more of the world than a country parson could

pretend to.

pt

or-

ty,

on,

gh-

of

ate

the

at

fon

ate

of

the

n of

nich

per

but

his

ning

hich

mall

lone

d at

elf.

nan,

pre-

effed

ould

s of

rence

She had in these disputes a particular advantage over Adams; for the was a mighty affecter of hard words, which the used in fuch a manner, that the parson, who durst not offend her by calling her words in queflion, was frequently at some loss to guess her meaning, and would have been much less puzzled by an Arabian manuscript.

Adams therefore took an opportunity one day, after a pretty long discourse with her on the essence (or, as as she pleased to term it, the incence) of matter, to mention the case of young Andrews; defiring her to recommend him to her lady as a youth very fusceptible of learning, and one whose instruction in Latin he would himself undertake; by which means he might be qualified for a higher station than that of a footman: and added, the knew it was in his mafter's power eafily to provide for him in a better manner. He therefore defired, that the boy might be left behind under his care.

'La, Mr Adams,' faid Mrs Slipflop, 'do ' you think my lady will fuffer any preambles ' about any fuch matter? She is going to ' London very concifely, and I am confidous

VOL. I.

' would not leave Joey behind her on any ' account; for he is one of the genteelest ' young fellows you may fee in a fummer's day, and I am confidous she would as foon ' think of parting with a pair of her grey ' mares; for the values herfelf as much on the one as the other.' Adams would have interrupted, but she proceeded: ' And why ' is Latin more necessitous for a footman than * a gentleman? It is very proper that you · clergymen must learn it, because you can't · preach without it: but I have heard great gentlemen fay in London, that it is fit for ' no body elfe. I am confidous my lady would be angry with me for mentioning it; and I shall draw myself into no such ' delemy.' At which words her lady's bell rung, and Mr Adams was forced to retire; nor could he gain a fecond opportunity with her before their London journey, which happened a few days afterwards. However, Andrews behaved very thankfully and gratefully to him for his intended kindness, which he told him he never would forget, and at the fame time received from the good man many admonitions concerning the regulation of his future conduct, and his perseverance in innocence and industry.

he

at

ap

pr

Wa

bli

ch

Wil

ho

his the

C H A P. IV.

iy eft

r's on

ey

on ve

hy

an

ou

n't

eat

for

dy

ng

ch

oell.

re;

ith

ap-

er,

ite-

ich

lat

an

ion

nce

What happened after their journey to London.

O fooner was young Andrews arrived at London, than he began to scrape an acquaintance with his party-coloured brethren, who endeavoured to make him defpife his former course of life. His hair was eut after the newest fashion, and became his chief care: he went abroad with it all the morning in papers, and dreffed it out in the afternoon. They could not, however, teach him to game, fwear, drink, nor any other genteel vice the town abounded with. applied most of his leifure hours to music, in which he greatly improved himself; and became fo perfect a connoisseur in that art, that he led the opinion of all the other footmen at an opera, and they never condemned or applauded a fingle fong contrary to his approbation or dislike. He was a little too forward in riots at the play-houses and affemblies; and when he attended his lady at church (which was but feldom) he behaved with less seeming devotion than formerly: however, if he was outwardly a pretty fellow, his morals remained entirely uncorrupted, though he was at the fame time fmarter and

genteeler than any of the beaus in town,

either in or out of livery.

His lady, who had often faid of him that Joey was the handsomest and genteelest footman in the kingdom, but that it was pity he wanted spirit, began now to find that fault no longer; on the contrary, she was frequently heard to cry out, 'Ay, there is ' fome life in this fellow.' She plainly faw the effects which the town air hath on the foberest conflitutions. She would now walk out with him into Hyde-Park in a morning, and when tired, which happened almost every minute, would lean on his arm, and converse with him in great familiarity. Whenever The stept out of her coach, she would take him by the hand, and fometimes, for fear of flumbling, press it very hard: she admitted him to deliver messages at her bed-side in a morning, leer'd at him at table, and indulged him in all those innocent freedoms which women of figure may permit without the least fully of their virtue.

CC

ra

ch

fre

day

tall

fcar

ente

don

on

enci

Lad

the i

* I

visit,

but t

was h

I

But though their virtue remains unfullied, yet now and then some small arrows will glance on the shadow of it, their reputation; and so it fell out to Lady Booby, who happened to be walking arm in arm with Joey one morning in Hyde-Park, when Lady Tittle and Lady Tattle came accidentally

by in their coach: 'Bless me,' fays Lady Tittle, ' can I believe my eyes? Is that ' Lady Booby?' ' Surely,' fays Tattle. But what makes you furprifed?" ' Why, is not that her footman?' replied Tittle. At which Tattle laughed, and cried, ' An old bufinefs, I affure you; is it possible you fould not have heard it? The whole town hath known it this half year.' The confequence of this interview was a whisper through a hundred vifits, which were feparately performed by the two ladies * the fame afternoon; and might have had a mifchievous effect, had it not been stopt by two fresh reputations which were published the day afterwards, and engroffed the whole talk of the town.

S

S

ve

k

5,

(e

er

of

ed

a

ed

ch

he

ed,

vill

on;

oey

ady

ally

But whatever opinion or fuspicion the scandalous inclination of desamers might entertain of Lady Booby's innocent freedoms, it is certain they made no impression on young Andrews, who never offered to encroach beyond the liberties which his Lady allowed him. A behaviour which she imputed to the violent respect he preser-

^{*}It may feem an abfurdity that Tattle should visit, as she actually did, to spread a known scandal: but the reader may reconcile this, by supposing with me, that not with standing what she says, this was her first acquaintance with it.

ved for her, and which ferved only to heighten a fomething she began to conceive, and which the next chapter will open a little farther.

C H A P. V.

The death of Sir Thomas Booby, with the affectionate and mournful behaviour of his widow, and the great purity of Joseph Andrews.

a

il

.

·y

· a

·y

· iI

· m

· di

· ha

· do

· to

" th

· pr

· lac

· fhe

'ad

A T this time an accident happened which put a stop to those agreeable walks, which probably would have foon puffed up the cheeks of Fame, and caused her to blow her brazen trumpet through the town; and this was no other than the death of Sir Thomas Booby, who, departing this life, left his disconsolate lady confined to her house, as elosely as if she herself had been attacked by fome violent disease. During the first fix days the poor lady admitted none but Mrs Slipflop, and three female friends, who made a party at cards: but on the feventh fhe ordered Joey, whom, for a good reason, we shall hereafter call Joseph, to bring up her tea-kettle. The Lady being in bed, called Joseph to her, bade him sit down, and having accidentally laid her hand on his, she asked him if he had ever been in

le

be

bis

ph

ch

ks,

up

WO

ind

Sir

ife,

her

een

ing

tted

nale

on

or a

PH,

eing

1 fit

and

n in

love? Joseph answered with some confusion. it was time enough for one fo young as himfelf to think on fuch things. ' As young ' as you are,' replied the Lady, ' I am con-' vinced you are no stranger to that passion. ' Come, Joey,' fays she, 'tell me truly, who ' is the happy girl whose eyes have made a ' conquest of you?' Joseph returned, that all the women he had ever feen, were equally indifferent to him. 'O then,' faid the Lady, 'you are a general lover. Indeed · you handsome fellows, like handsome wo-' men, are very long and difficult in fix-' ing: but yet you shall never perfuade me ' that your heart is fo unsusceptible of af-' fection; I rather impute what you fay to ' your fecrefy, a very commendable quality, ' and what I am far from being angry with ' you for. Nothing can be more unworthy ' in a young man than to betray any inti-' macies with the ladies.' ' Ladies! Ma-' dam,' faid Joseph, ' I am fure I never ' had the impudence to think of any that ' deserve that name.' . ' Don't pretend ' to too much modesty,' faid she, ' for ' that fometimes may be impertinent; but ' pray, answer me this question. Suppose a ' lady should happen to like you; suppose ' she should prefer you to all your sex, and ' admit you to the fame familiarities as you

' might have hoped for, if you had been born her equal, are you certain that no ' vanity could tempt you to discover her? · Answer me honestly, Joseph; have you so ' much more fense, and so much more virtue, than you handsome young fellows generally have, who make no fcruple of facrificing our dear reputation to your pride, without confidering the great obligation we lay on you, by our condescension and ' confidence! Can you keep a fecret, my ' Joey?' ' Madam,' fays he, ' I hope your · Ladyship can't tax me with ever betraying the fecrets of the family; and I hope, if · you was to turn me away, I might have ' that character of you.' ' I don't intend to turn you away, Joey,' faid she, and fighed, · I am afraid it is not in my power.' She then raised herself a little in her bed, and discovered one of the whitest necks that ever was feen; at which Joseph blushed: 'La!' faid she, in an affected surprize, ' what am ' I doing? I have trusted myself with a man · alone, naked in bed; suppose you should have any wicked intentions upon my ho-· nour, how should I defend myself?' Joseph protested that he never had the least evil defign against her. 'No,' fays she, 'perhaps · you may not call your defigns wicked; and · perhaps they are not fo.'—He fwore they

th

he

gi

6

' n

· il

· k

· ki

·T

· fo

Tofe

· ob

do the

fer fays

yo:

were not. 'You mifunderstand me,' fays she, en · I mean, if they were against my honour, 110 they may not be wicked; but the world er? calls them fo. But then, fay you, the world 1 fo will never know any thing of the matter; ue, ' yet would not that be trufting to your fene-' crefy? Must not my reputation be then in cri-' your power? Would you not then be my ide, ' master?' Joseph begged her Ladyship to be tion comforted; for that he would never imagine and the least wicked thing against her, and that my he had rather die a thousand deaths than our give her any reason to suspect him. 'Yes,' faid she, 'I must have reason to suspect you. e, if ' Are not you a man? and without vanity I nave ' may pretend to fome charms. But perd to ' haps you may fear I should prosecute you; hed, ' indeed I hope you do; and yet Heaven She ' knows I should never have the confidence and ' to appear before a court of justice; and you ever 'know, Joey, I am of a forgiving temper. La! 'Tell me, Joey, don't you think I should t am ' forgive you?' ' Indeed, Madam,' fays man Joseph, 'I will never do any thing to difiould ' oblige your Ladyship.' 'How,' fays she, ho-' do you think it would not disoblige me ofeph ' then? Do you think I would willingly fufevil ' fer you?' 'I don't understand you, Madam,' rhaps fays Joseph. 'Don't you?' faid she; 'then ; and ' you are either a fool, or pretend to be fo; they

I find I was mistaken in you. So get you down stairs, and never let me see your face · again: your pretended innocence cannot ' impose on me.' ' Madam,' faid Joseph, I would not have your Ladyship think any evil of me, I have always endeavoured to be a dutiful fervant both to you and my " mafter.' 'O thou villain!' answered my Lady, ' why didft thou mention the name of that dear man, unless to torment me, to bring his precious memory to my mind!' (and then she burst into a fit of tears,) ' Get thee from my fight, I shall never endure ' thee more.' At which words fhe turned away from him; and Joseph retreated from the room in a most disconsolate condition, and writ that letter, which the reader will find in the next chapter.

66

66

66

66]

66 V

ee n

ec d

c. W

" W

a fla

66 15

C H A P. VI.

How Joseph Andrews writ a letter to his

To Mrs Pamela Andrews, living with Squire Booby.

" Dear Sifter,

" CINCE I received your letter of your

good lady's death, we have had a misfortune of the same kind in our family.

NOU

ace

not

ph, any

my

my e of

, to nd!

Get

dure

rned

from

ition,

will

to his

Squire

f your

had a

family.

" My worthy master Sir Thomas died about " four days ago; and what is worse, my " poor Lady is certainly gone distracted. " None of the fervants expected her to take " it so to heart, because they quarrelled al-" most every day of their lives; but no more " of that, because you know, Pamela, I " never loved to tell the fecrets of my ma-" ster's family; but to be fure you must have " known they never loved one another; and " I have heard her Ladyship wish his Ho-" nour dead above a thousand times; but " no body knows what it is to lose a friend " till they have loft him.

" Don't tell any body that I write, be-" cause I should not care to have folks fay I

" discover what passes in our family: but it " it had not been fo great a lady, I should

" have thought she had had a-mind to me. " Dear Pamela, don't tell any body; but the

" ordered me to fit down by her bed-fide,

" when she was in naked bed; and she held

" my hand, and talked exactly as a lady " does to her fweetheart in a stage-play,

" which I have feen in Covent-Garden,

" while she wanted him to be no better than " he should be.

" If Madam be mad, I shall not care for " flaying long in .the family; fo I heartily

" with you could get me a place either at

" the Squire's, or fome other neighbouring " gentleman's, unless it be true that you are " going to be married to Parson Williams, " as folks talk, and then I should be very

" willing to be his clerk; for which you " know I am qualified, being able to read,

" and to fet a pfalm. " I fancy I shall be discharged very soon; " and the moment I am, unless I hear from " you, I shall return to my old master's country-feat, if it be only to fee Parson "Adams, who is the best man in the world. " London is a bad place, and there is fo " little good-fellowship, that the next-door " neighbours don't know one another. Pray " give my fervice to all friends that enquire " for me; fo I rest

" Your loving brother,

" JOSEPH ANDREWS."

0

0 2

n

fa

hi

arı

inc

Wil

int

gin

not

You

up.

As foon as Joseph had fealed and directed this letter, he walked down stairs, where he met Mrs Slipflop; with whom we shall take this opportunity to bring the reader a little better acquainted. She was a maiden gentlewoman of about forty-five years of age, who having made a fmall flip in her youth, had continued a good maid ever fince. She was not at this time remarkably handfome;

you read,
oon;
from
ofter's
arfon
yorld.

ring

are

ams,

-door Pray equire

is 10

EWS."

where thall cader a maiden of age, youth, e. She

being very short, and rather too corpulent in body, and fomewhat red, with the addition of pimples in the face. Her nofe was likewise rather too large, and her eyes too little; nor did the refemble a cow fo much in her breath, as in two brown globes which she carried before her; one of her legs was also a little shorter than the other, which occasioned her to limp as she walked. This fair creature had long cast the eyes of affection on Joseph, in which she had not met with quite fo good fuccess as she probably wished, though, besides the allurements of her native charms, she had given him tea, sweetmeats, wine, and many other delicacies, of which, by keeping the keys, she had the absolute command. Joseph, however, had not returned the least gratitude to all these favours, not even fo much as a kifs; though I would not infinuate the was fo eafily to be fatisfied: for furely then he would have been highly blameable. The truth is, she was arrived at an age when she thought she might indulge herself in any liberties with a man, without the danger of bringing athird person into the world to betray them. She imagined, that, by fo long a felf-denial, she had not only made amends for the small slip of her youth above hinted at, but had likewise laid up a quantity of merit to excuse any future VOL. I.

failings. In a word, she resolved to give a loofe to her amorous inclinations, and to pay off the debt of pleasure she found she owed

herfelf, as fast as possible.

With these charms of person, and in this disposition of mind, she encountered poor Joseph at the bottom of the stairs, and asked him if he would drink a glass of something good this morning. Joseph, whose spirits were not a little cast down, very readily and thankfully accepted the offer; and together they went into a closet, where having delivered him a full glass of ratafia, and defired him to fit down, Mrs Slipflop thus began:

· Sure nothing can be a more fimple contract in a woman, than to place her affections on a boy. If I had ever thought it would have been my fate, I should have wished to die a thousand deaths rather than live to fee that day. If we like a man, the lightest hint sophisticates. Whereas a boy proposes upon us to break through all ' the regulations of modelty, before we can · make any oppression upon him.' Joseph, who did not understand a word she said, answered, 'Yes, Madam; -' 'Yes, Madam,' replied Mrs Slipflop, with fome warmth, 'Do you intend to refult my passion? Is it not eo nough, ungrateful as you are, to make no • return to all the favours I have done you:

.]

· a

ea

ay

ved

his

oor

ked

ing

rits

and

her

leli•

ired

con-

ffec-

at it

have

ther

nan,

as a

h all

can

who

wer-

plied

you

ot e-

ke no

you:

1:

but you must treat me with ironing? Barbarous monster! how have I deserved that ' my passion should be resulted and treated with ironing?' 'Madam,' answered Joseph, ' I don't understand your hard words: but I am certain you have no occasion to call me ungrateful: for fo far from intending you any wrong, I have always loved you as ' if you had been my own mother.' ' How, ' firrah! fays Mrs Slipflop, in a rage: 'Your own mother? Do you affinuate that I amold ' enough to be your mother? I don't know what a stripling may think; but I believe ' a man would refer me to any greenfickness ' filly girl whatfomdever: but I ought to ' despise you rather than be angry with you, for referring the conversation of girls to ' that of a woman of fense.' ' Madam,' says Joseph, 'I am fure I have always valued the ' honour you did me by your conversation ' for I know you are a woman of learning.' ' Yes, but, Joseph,' faid she, a little softened by the compliment to her learning, ' if you ' had a value for me, you certainly would have found fome method of shewing it me; ' for I am convicted you must see the value 'I have for you. Yes, Joseph, my eyes, whether I would or no, must have declared 'a passion I cannot conquer. -- Oh! Jo-' feph!'

E 2

As when a hungry tigrefs, who long has traversed the woods in fruitless fearch, sees within the reach of her claws a lamb, she prepares to leap on her prey; or as a voracious pike, of immenfe fize, furveys through the liquid element a roach, or a gudgeon, which cannot escape her jaws, opens them wide to swallow the little fish; so did Mrs Slipflop prepare to lay her violent amorous hands on the poor Joseph, when luckily her mistress's bell rung, and delivered the intend. ed martyr from her clutches. She was obliged to leave him abruptly, and to defer the execution of her purpose till some other time. We shall therefore return to the Lady Booby, and give our reader some account of her behaviour, after the was left by Joseph in a temper of mind not greatly different from that of the inflamed Slipflop.

ir

th

pr

its

the

me

the Lac

gan

Her

pric

heri

Jose

now

and object

her l

had

1

C H A P. VII.

Sayings of wife men. A dialogue between the Lady and her maid; and a panegyric, or rather satire, on the passion of love, in the sublime style.

T is the observation of some ancient sage, whose name I have forgot, that the passions operate differently on the human mind, as diseases on the body, in proportion to the

strength or weakness, soundness or rottenness of the one and the other.

We hope therefore a judicious reader will give himself some pains to observe, what we have so greatly laboured to describe, the different operations of this passion of love in the gentle and cultivated mind of the Lady Booby, from those which it effected in the less polished and coarser disposition of Mrs Slipslop.

n

S

S

r l.

()=

er

er

dy

nt

ph

nt

the

or

the

ige,

paf-

ind,

the

Another philosopher, whose name also at present escapes my memory, hath somewhere said, that resolutions taken in the absence of the beloved object, are very apt to vanish in its presence; on both which wise sayings, the sollowing chapter may serve as a comment.

No fooner had Joseph lest the room in the manner we had before related, than the Lady, enraged at her disappointment, began to reslect with severity on her conduct. Her love was now changed to disdain, which pride assisted to torment her. She despised herself for the meanness of her passion, and Joseph for its ill success. However, she had now got the better of it in her own opinion, and determined immediately to dismiss the object. After much turning and tossing in her bed, and many soliloquies, which, if we had no better matter for our reader, we

E 3

would give him, she at last rung the bell as above-mentioned, and was presently attended by Mrs Slipslop, who was not much better pleased with Joseph than the Lady herself.

' Slipstop,' faid Lady Booby, ' when did ' you fee Joseph?' The poor woman was fo furprised at the unexpected found of his name, at so critical a time, that she had the greatest difficulty to conceal the confusion the was under from her mistress; whom she answered, nevertheless, with pretty good confidence, though not entirely void of fear of fuspicion, that she had not feen him that morning. 'I am afraid,' faid Lady Booby, he is a wild young fellow.' 'That he is,' faid Slipflop, ' and a wicked one too. To ' my knowledge he games, drinks, fwears, and fights eternally: befides, he is horribly ' indicted to wenching.' ' Ay!' faid the Lady, 'I never heard that of him.' 'O ' Madam,' answered the other, ' he is so ' lewd a rascal, that if your Ladyship keeps ' him much longer, you will not have one ' virgin in your house except myself. And · yet I can't conceive what the wenches fee in him, to be fo foolifhly fond as they are; in my eyes, he is as ugly a fcarecrow as ever I upheld.' 'Nay,' faid the Lady, the boy is well enough.' La, Ma'am,'

. 6

La

6 E

· I

faid

· h

flop

b

re

fil

Lac

Slip

as

id-

ch

did

fo his

the

ion

fhe

on-

of hat

by,

is,'
To

ars,

bly

the O

fo

eeps

one

And

fee

are;

as

idy,

ım,

cries Slipflop, ' I think him the ragmati-' callest fellow in the family.' ' Sure, Slip-' flop,' fays she, ' you are mittaken; but ' which of the women do you most suspect?' ' Madam,' fays Slipflop, ' there is Betty the chambermaid, I am almost convicted, is with child by him.' Ay!' fays the Lady, ' then pray pay her her wages inflantly. I will keep no fuch fluts in my ' family. And as for Joseph, you may dif-' card him too.' 'Would your Ladyship have him paid off immediately?" cries Slipflop, ' for perhaps when Betty is gone, he ' may mend; and really the boy is a good ' fervant, and a strong, healthy, luscious boy 'enough.' 'This morning,' answered the Lady with some vehemence. 'I wish, Ma-' dam,' cries Slipslop, 'your Ladyship would be fo good as to try him a little longer. 'I will not have my commands disputed,' faid the Lady, ' fure you are not fond of ' him yourself.' ' I, Madam?' cries Slipflop, reddening, if not blufhing, ' I should be forry to think your Ladyship had any ' reason to respect me of fondness for a fel-' low; and if it be your pleasure, I shall ful-' fill it with as much reluctance as possible.' ' As little, I suppose you mean,' faid the Lady, ' and fo about it instantly.' Mrs Slipflop went out; and the Lady had fcarce

taken two turns, before fhe fell to knocking and ringing with great violence. Slipflop, who did not travel post-haste, soon returned, and was countermanded as to Joseph, but ordered to fend Betty about her bufiness without delay. She went out a fecond time with much greater alacrity than before; when the Lady began immediately to accuse herfelf of want of resolution, and to apprehend the return of her affection with its pernicious consequences: she therefore applied herself again to the bell, and resummoned Mrs Slipflop into her presence; who again returned, and was told by her mistress, that the had confidered better of the matter, and was absolutely resolved to turn away Joseph; which she ordered her to do immediately. Slipflop, who knew the violence of her Lady's temper, and would not venture her place for any Adonis or Hercules in the universe, left her a third time; which she had no sooner done, than the little god Cupid, fearing he had not yet done the Lady's business, took a fresh arrow with the sharpest point out of his quiver, and shot it directly into her heart: in other and plainer language, the Lady's passion got the better of her reason. She called back Slipflop once more, and told her, fhe had refolved to fee the boy, and examine him herself; therefore bid her send him up.

ba wo

The fhe in. of to i (for

tho

play doft ceiv ligh pan

mon best meta grea gend gran Eng

phos

This wavering in her mistress's temper probably put something into the waiting-gentlewoman's head, not necessary to mention to

the fagacious reader.

ng

p,

d,

ess

ne

e;

ile

re-

er-

ied

red

ain

hat

ind

oh;

ely.

ly's

for

left

ner

he

ka

t of

art:

dy's

She

her,

nine

up.

Lady Booby was going to call her back again, but could not prevail with herself. The next consideration therefore was, how she should behave to Joseph when he came in. She resolved to preserve all the dignity of the woman of fashion to her servant, and to indulge herself in this last view of Joseph (for that she was most certainly resolved it should be) at his own expence, by first insulting, and then discarding him.

O Love, what monstrous tricks dost thou play with thy votaries of both sexes! How dost thou deceive them, and make them deceive themselves! Their follies are thy delight! their sighs make thee laugh, and their

pangs are thy merriment!

Not the great Rich, who turns men into monkeys, wheelbarrows, and whatever else best humours his fancy, hath so strangely metamorphosed the human shape; nor the great Cibber, who consounds all number, gender, and breaks through every rule of grammar at his will, hath so distorted the English language, as thou dost metamorphose and distort the human senses.

Thou puttest out our eyes, stoppest up our

ears, and takest away the power of our nostrils; so that we can neither see the largest
object, hear the loudest noise, nor smell the
most poignant persume. Again, when thou
pleasest, thou canst make a molehill appear
as a mountain, a jew's harp sound like a
trumpet, and a daizy smell like a violet.
Thou canst make cowardice brave, avarice
generous, pride humble, and cruelty tenderhearted. In short, thou turnest the heart of
man inside-out, as a juggler doth a petticoat,
and bringest whatsoever pleaseth thee out from
it. If there be any one who doubts all this,
let him read the next chapter.

C H A P. VIII.

In which, after some very fine writing, the history goes on, and relates the interview between the Lady and Joseph; where the latter hath set an example, which we despair of seeing sollowed by his sex, in this vicious age.

Now the rake Hesperus had called for his breeches, and having well rubbed his drowfy eyes, prepared to dress himself for all night; by whose example his brother rakes on earth likewise leave those beds, in which they had slept away the day. Now Thetis, the good housewise, began to put

on Ph In wh

rad

der the forour live cam

imp

be in variation man from their them who, ties of twice

chap

prefe

on the pot in order to regale the good man Phæbus, after his daily labours were over. In vulgar language, it was in the evening when Joseph attended his Lady's orders.

But as it becomes us to preferve the character of this Lady, who is the heroine of our tale; and as we have naturally a wonderful tenderness for that beautiful part of the human species, called the Fair Sex; before we discover too much of her frailty to our reader, it will be proper to give him a lively idea of the vast temptation which overcame all the efforts of a modest and virtuous mind; and then we humbly hope his goodnature will rather pity than condemn the

imperfection of human virtue.

Nay, the ladies themselves will, we hope, be induced, by confidering the uncommon variety of charms which united in this young man's person, to bridle their rampant pasfion for chastity, and be at least as mild as their violent modelty and virtue will permit them, in cenfuring the conduct of a woman, who, perhaps, was in her own disposition as chaste as those pure and fanctified virgins, who, after a life innocently spent in the gaieties of the town, begin about fifty to attend twice per diem, at the polite churches and chapels, to return thanks for the grace which preferved them formerly among beaux, from

the iew the

10-

rest

the

lou

ear

a

let.

rice

ler-

t of

oat,

om

his,

det his

for bed for ther s, in

Vov

put

temptations perhaps less powerful than what

now attacked the Lady Booby.

Mr Joseph Andrews was now in the oneand-twentieth year of his age. He was of the highest degree of middle stature. His limbs were put together with great elegance, and no less strength. His legs and thighs were formed in the exacteft proportion. His shoulders were broad and brawny; but yet his arms hung fo eafily, that he had all the symptoms of strength without the least clumfiness. His hair was of a nut-brown colour, and was displayed in wanton ringlets down his back. His forehead was high, his eyes dark, and as full of sweetness as of fire. His nose a little inclined to the Roman. His teeth white and even. His lips full, red, and foft. His beard was only rough on his chin and upper lip; but his cheeks, in which his blood glowed, were overspread with a thick down. His countenance had a tenderness joined with a fenfibility inexpressible. Add to this the most perfect neatness in his dress, and an air, which, to those who have not feen many noblemen, would give an idea of nobility.

ful

the

of

for

fyn

5 n

· 1

C

Ca

Yo

c m

Such was the person who now appeared before the Lady. She viewed him some time in silence, and twice or thrice before the spake, changed her mind as to the manhat

ne-

s of

His

nce,

ighs

His

yet

the

um-

our,

OWn

eves

His

His

, and

chin

h his

thick

erness

Add

dreis,

c not

dea of

peared

fome

before

man.

ner in which she should begin. At length the faid to him, ' Joseph, I am forry to hear ' fuch complaints against you; I am told ' you behave fo rudely to the maids, that they cannot do their bufiness in quiet; I e mean those who are not wicked enough to ' hearken to your folicitations As to others, ' they may perhaps not call you rude: for there are wicked fluts who make one athamed of one's own fex; and are as ready to admit any nauseous familiarity as fellows ' to offer it: nay, there are fuch in my fa-' mily; but they shall not stay in it; that ' impudent trollop, who is with child by ' you, is discharged by this time.'

As a person who is struck through the heart with a thunderbolt looks extremely surprised, may, and perhaps is so too —— thus the poor Joseph received the salse accusation of his mistres; he blushed and looked confounded, which she misinterpreted to be symptoms of his guilt, and thus went on:

'Come hither, Joseph: another mistress might discard you for these offences; but I have compassion for your youth, and it I could be certain you would be no more guilty—Consider, child, (laying her hand carelessly upon his), you are a handsome young fellow, and might do better; you might make your fortune.'— 'Madam,' Yol. I.

faid Joseph, 'I do affure your Ladyship, I don't know whether any maid in the house ' is man or woman.' 'Oh, fy! Joseph,' answered the Lady, 'don't commit another crime in denying the truth. I could pardon the first; but I hate a liar.' 'Madam,' cries Joseph, 'I hope your Ladyship will ' not be offended at my afferting my inno-' cence: for by all that is facred, I have " never offered more than kiffing.' 'Kiffing!' faid the Lady, with great discomposure of countenance, and more redness in her cheeks. than anger in her eyes, 'do you call that ' no crime? kiffing, Joseph, is as a prologue to a play. Can I believe a young fellow of your age and complexion will be content ' with kiffing? No, Joseph, there is no wo-' man who grants that, but will grant more; ' and I am deceived greatly in you, if you ' would not put her closely to it. What ' would you think, Joseph, if I admitted you ' to kiss me?' Joseph reply'd, 'He would ' fooner die than have any fuch thought.' " And yet, Joseph,' returned she, 'ladies · have admitted their footmen to fuch fami-· liarities; and footmen, I confess to you, ' much less deserving them; fellows without ' half your charms: for fuch might almost excuse the crime. Tell me, therefore, Jofeph, if I should admit you to such freedom,

h

fp

m

or

afe

an

fro

Pra

no.

fric

ide

you

wh

mo

I

ife

h,

er

Ir-

n,

ill

10-

ave

3!

of

ks,

hat

rue

OW

ent

TO-

re;

rou

hat

VOIL

uld

ht.'

dies

mi-

ou,

iout

nott

10-

0111,

what would you think of me? -- tell me freely.' ' Madam,' faid Joseph, 'I should think ' your Ladyship condescended a great deal below yourself.' 'Pugh!' said she, 'that I am to answer to myself: but would you on not infilt on more? Would you be contented with a kifs? Would not your inclina-' tions be all on fire rather by fuch a favour?' ' Madam,' faid Joseph, 'if they were, I hope 'I should be able to controul them, without ' fuffering them to get the better of my vir-' tue.'-You have heard, reader, poets talk of the statue of Surprise; you have heard likewise, or else you have heard very little, how Surprise made one of the sons of Cræsus fpeak though he was dumb. You have feen the faces, in the eighteen-penny gallery, when through the trap-door, to foft or no music, Mr Bridgewater, Mr William Mills, or some other of ghostly appearance, hath ascended with a face all pale with powder, and a thirt all bloody with ribbons: but from none of these, nor from Phidias, or Praxiteles, if they should return to life no, not from the inimitable pencil of my friend Hogarth, could you receive fuch an idea of surprise, as would have entered in at your eyes, had they beheld the Lady Booby, when those last words issued out from the mouth of Joseph .- "Your virtue!' faid F 2

the Lady, recovering after a filence of two minutes, 'I shall never survive it. Your ' virtue! Intolerable confidence! have you ' the assurance to pretend, that when a Lady demeans herfelf to throw afide the rules of decency, in order to honour you with the ' highest favour in her power, your virtue ' should refut her inclination? that when ' fhe had conquered her own virtue, fhe ' should find an obstruction in yours?' ' Ma-' dam,' faid Joseph, 'I can't fee why her ha-' ving no virtue, thould be a reason against ' my having any; or why, because I am a ' man, or because I am poor, my virtue ' must be subservient to her pleasures.' 'I ' am out of patience,' cries the Lady, ' did ever mortal hear of a man's virtue! Did ever the greatest, or the gravest men pre-' tend to any of this kind! Will magistrates who punith lewdness, or parsons who preach against it, make any scruple of committing it? and can a boy, a firipling, have the ' confidence to talk of his virtue? ' Madam,' fays Joseph, ' that boy is the brother of Pa-· mela, and would be ashamed that the cha-· flity of his family, which is preferved in her, thould be stained in him. If there are , fuch men as your Ladyship mentions, I am forry for it; and I with they had an opportunity of reading over those letters which

. .

· y

fay

· t.

6 11

. 11

· y

e II

éd,

his viol

ord

: 11

· in

fort

10

ar

u

dy

of he

ue

en

he

la-

12-

nft

n a

tue

·I

 did

Did

re-

ites

ach

ing

the

ım,

Pa-

ha-

in

are

am

por-

hick

my father hath fent me of my fifter Pame-' la's; nor do I doubt but fuch an example " would amend them." 'You impudent vil-' lain,' cries the Lady in a rage, ' do you ' infult me with the follies of my relation, who hath exposed himself all over the ' country upon your fifter's account? a little ' vixen whom I have always wondered my ' late Lady Booby ever kept in her house. ' Sirrah! get out of my fight, and prepare to fet out this night; for I will order you ' your wages immediately, and you shall be 'stripped and turned away.' 'Madam,' fays Joseph, 'I am forry I have offended ' your Ladyship, I am sure I never intended 'it.' 'Yes, firrah,' cries she, 'you have had ' the vanity to misconstrue the little innocent ' freedom I took, in order to try whether ' what I heard was true. O' my confeience, ' you have had the affurance to imagine I " was fond of you myfelf.' Joseph answered, he had only spoke out of tenderness for his virtue; at which words the flew into a violent passion, and, refusing to hear more, ordered him instantly to leave the room.

He was no fooner gone, than the burst forth into the following exclamation: Whither doth this violent passion hurry us? What meanesses do we submit to from its impulse? Wisely we resist its first and least

'approaches; for it is then only we can affure 'ourselves the victory. No woman could 'ever safely say, so far only will I go. Have I not exposed myself to the resusal of my 'footman? I cannot bear the reslection.' Upon which the applied herself to the bell, and rung it with infinite more violence than was necessary, the faithful Slipslop attending near at hand: to say the truth, she had conceived a suspicion at her last interview with her mistress; and had waited ever since in the antichamber, having carefully applied her ears to the key-hole during the whole time that the preceding conversation passed between Joseph and the Lady.

C H A P. IX.

What passed between the Lady and Mrs Slipslop, in which we prophecy there are some strokes which every one will not truly comprehend at the first reading.

LIPSLOP,' faid the Lady, 'I find too much reason to believe all thou hast told me of this wicked Joseph; I have determined to part with him instantly; so go you to the steward, and bid him pay him his wages.' Slipslop, who had preserved hitherto a distance to her Lady, rather out of necessity than inclination, and who

th an

' a
' fi

'I
'po'
'he'
'fu

' cou ' you Slipfl ' mu

or you then

'I bi 'shock 'Mari 'ears them

The in which herfelf, fuspecte

re

ld

ve

ny

n.

11,

an

ng

11-

ith

he

le1°

me

be-

lip-

one

0711-

find

hou

ave

; 10

pay

pre-

ther

who

thought the knowledge of this fecret had thrown down all diffinction between them, answered her mistress very pertly, ' She wished she knew her own mind; and that ' she was certain she would call her back ' again, before the was got half-way down ' stairs.' The Lady replied, ' she had taken ' a resolution, and was resolved to keep it.' 'I am forry for it,' cries Slipflop; ' and if 'I had known you would have punished the ' poor lad fo feverely, you should never have ' heard a particle of the matter. Here's a ' fuss indeed, about nothing!' ' Nothing!' returned my Lady, ' do you think I will ' countenance lewdness in my house!' 'If ' you will turn away every footman,' faid Slipflop, ' that is a lover of the sport, you ' must soon open the coach door yourself, ' or get a fet of mophrodites to wait upon 'you; and I am fure I hated the fight of 'them even finging in an opera.' 'Do as 'I bid you,' fays my Lady, ' and don't ' shock my ears with your beastly language.' 'Marry-come-up,' cries Slipflop, ' people's. ears are fometimes the nicest part about them.'

The Lady, who began to admire the new stile in which her waiting-gentlewoman delivered herself, and, by the conclusion of her speech, suspected somewhat of the truth, called her

VII

int

tio

poi

hac

as I

mo

car

abo

put

men

ther

fron

fing

Pete

feph

turn

fresh

fhe k

lowin

· by

an

Will

Wife

· paf

SI

5

back, and defired to know what the meant by the extraordinary degree of freedom in which the thought proper to indulge her tongue. ' Freedom!' fays Slipflop, 'I don't know what you call freedom, Madam; · fervants have tongues as well as their " miftreffes.' 'Yes, and faucy ones too,' answered the Lady, ' but I assure you I shall ' bear no fuch impertinence.' 'Imperti-' nence! I don't know that I am imperti-' nent,' fays Slipslop. ' Yes indeed you are,' cries my Lady, ' and unless you mend your manners, this house is no place for you.' ' Manners!' cries Slipflop, 'I never was thought to want manners nor modelly ' neither; and for places, there are more · places than one; and I know what I know.' What do you know, mistress?' answered the Lady. 'I am not obliged to tell that ' to every body,' fays Slipstop, ' any more ' than I am obliged to keep it a fecret.' ' I ' defire you would provide yourfelf,' anfwered the Lady. 'With all my heart,' replied the waiting-gentlewoman; and fo departed in a passion, and slapped the door after her.

The Lady too plainly perceived that her waiting-gentlewoman knew more than flat would willingly have had her acquainted with; and this she imputed to Joseph's hat-

ving discovered to her what past at the first interview. This therefore blew up her rage against him, and confirmed her in a resolu-

tion of parting with him.

in

er i't

1;

in.

0,

all

ti-

ti-

e,

ur

u.'

Vas

elty

ore

w.

red

ore

. [

an.

art,

de-

loor

her

11.3

nted

1124

But the dismissing Mrs Slipslop was a point not so easily to be resolved upon: she had the utmost tenderness for her reputation, as she knew on that depended many of the most valuable blessings of life; particularly cards, making curtesses in public places, and, above all, the pleasure of demolishing the reputations of others, in which innocent amusement she had an extraordinary delight. She therefore determined to submit to any insult from a fervant, rather than run a risk of losing the title to so many great privileges.

She therefore fent for her steward, Mr Peter Pounce, and ordered him to pay Jofeph his wages, to strip off his livery, and turn him out of the house that evening.

She then called Slipflop up, and after refreshing her spirits with a small cordial which she kept in her closet, she began in the sol-

lowing manner:

'Slipflop, why will you, who know my paffionate temper, attempt to provoke me by your answers? I am convinced you are an honest servant, and should be very unwilling to part with you. I believe likewise, you have found me an indulgent mis-

tress on many occasions, and have as little reason on your side to desire a change. I

a

al

bo

10

po th:

of

fep

flai

for

thir

ima

flie .

fion

thou

Ler,

a the

king

poor

whili

nour

crime

on th

as lor

E

can't help being furprifed, therefore, that

' you will take the furest method to offend 'me: I mean repeating my words, which

' you know I have always detelted.'

The prudent waiting-gentlewoman had duely weighed the whole matter, and found, on mature deliberation, that a good place in possession, was better than one in expectation. As she found her mistress, therefore, inclined to relent, she thought proper also to put on some small condescention; which was as readily accepted: and so the affair was reconciled, all offences forgiven, and a present of a gown and petticoat made her, as an instance of her lady's future favour.

She offered once or twice to speak in favour of Joseph: but sound her lady's heart so obdurate, that she prudently dropt all such efforts. She considered there were more sootmen in the house, and some as stout sellows, though not quite so handsome as Joseph; besides, the reader hath already seen her tender advances had not met with the encouragement she might have reasonably expected. She thought she had thrown away a great deal of sack and sweet-meats on an ungrateful rascal; and being a little inclined to the opinion of that semale sect, who hold

one lufty young fellow to be near as good as another lufty young fellow, fhe at last gave up Joseph and his cause, and with a triumph over her passion highly commendable, walked off with her present, and with great tranquillity paid a visit to a stone-lottle, which is of sovereign use to a philosophical temper.

. I

that

ffend

hich

had

ound,

ice in

ation.

lined

ut on

as as

as re-

refent

an in.

in fa-

heart

pt all

e more

ut fel-

as 10.

ly teen

th the

onably

n away

s on an

nclined

o hold

She left not her mistress so easy. The poor lady could not reslect, without agony, that her dear reputation was in the power of her servants. All her comfort, as to Joseph, was, that she hoped he did not understand her meaning; at least, she could say for herself, she had not plainly expressed any thing to him; and as to Mrs Slipslop, she imagined she could bribe her to secrecy.

But what hurt her most was, that in reality she had not so entirely conquered her passion; the little god lay lurking in her heart, though anger and disdain so hoodwinked her, that she could not see him. She was a thousand times on the very brink of revoking the sentence she had passed against the poor youth. Love became his advocate, and whispered many things in his favour. Honour likewise endeavoured to vindicate his crime, and Pity to mitigate his punishment; on the other side, Pride and Revenge spoke as leudly against him; and thus the poor

lady was tortured with perplexity, opposite passions distracting and tearing her mind dis-

ferent ways.

So have I feen, in the hall of Westminster, where Serjeant Bramble hath been retained on the right fide, and Serjeant Puzzle on the left, the balance of opinion (fo equal were there fees) alternately incline to either scale, Now Bramble throws in an argument, and Puzzle's scale strikes the beam; again, Bramble thares the like fate, overpowered by the weight of Puzzle. Here Bramble hits, there Puzzle frikes; here one has you, there t'other has you, 'till at last all becomes one scene of confusion in the tortured minds of the hearers; equal wagers are laid on the fuccess, and neither judge nor jury can possibly make any thing of the matter; all things are fo enveloped by the careful ferjeants, in doubt and obscurity.

0

di

to

ve

H

re

fe!

cal

for

nei

his

" m

" is

* ha

Or as it happens in the confcience, where honour and honesty pull one way, and a bribe and necessity an other.— If it was our present business only to make similes, we could produce many more to this purpose: but a simile (as well as a word) to the wife. We shall therefore see a little after our hero, for whom the reader is doubtless

in fome pain.

H A P. X.

ofite dif-

nster,

ained

n the

M.e.s. scale.

and

imble

the the

there

other

ene ci

arers;

, and

ce any

enve-

ot and

where

and a

t was milies,

s pur-

to the

after

ubtles

Joseph writes unother letter; His transactions with Mr Peter Pounce, &c. with his departure from Lady Booby.

THE disconsolate Joseph would not have had an understanding sufficient for the principal fubject of such a book as this, if he had any longer misunderstood the drift of his miltress; and indeed, that he did not difcern it fooner, the reader will be pleafed to apply to an unwillingness in him to discover what he must condemn in her as a fault. Having therefore quitted her presence, he retired into his own garret, and entered himfelf into an ejaculation on the numberless calamities which attend beauty, and the miffortune it was to be handsomer than one's neighbours.

He then fat down and addressed himself to his fifter Pamela, in the following words:

" Dear fister Pamela,

" LIOPING you are well, what news " In have I to tell you! O Pamela, my

" miltress is fallen in love with me -- That

" is, what great folks call falling in love, she

" has a mind to ruin me: but I hope I shall " have more refolution and more grace than VOL. I.

" to part with my virtue to any lady upon earth.

t!

ol

m

00

ve

11.1

to

ma

Or

of

wa

on

in.

hin

he

hou

nen

con

fell

ever

F

" Mr Adams hath often told me, that " chastity is as great a virtue in a man as " in a woman. He fays he never knew any " more than his wife, and I shall endeavour " to follow his example. Indeed, it is owing " entirely to his excellent fermons and ad-" vice, together with your letters, that I " have been able to refift a temptation, which " he fays no man complies with but he re-" pents in this world, or is damned for it in " the next; and why should I trust to re-" pentance on my death-bed, fince I may " die in my sleep? What fine things are good " advice and good examples! But I am glad " the turned me out of the chamber as the " did: for I had once almost forgotten every " word Parson Adams had ever faid to me, " I don't doubt, dear fister, but you will " have grace to preferve your virtue against " all trials; and I beg you earneftly to pray " I may be enabled to preferve mine: for " truly it is very feverely attacked by more " than one: but I hope I shall copy your " example, and that of Joseph my namesake; " and maintain my virtue against all tempta-" tions."

Joseph had not finished his letter, when he was summoned down stairs by Mr Peter

Pounce, to receive his wages: for, befides that out of eight pounds a year he allowed his father and mother four, he had been obliged, in order to furnish himself with musical instruments, to apply to the generofity of the aforefaid Peter, who, on urgent occasions, used to advance the servants their wages: not before they were due, but before they were payable; that is, perhaps half a year after they were due; and this at the moderate premium of fifty per cent. or a little more; by which charitable methods, together with lending money to other people, and even to his own mafter and mistrefs, the honest man had from nothing, in a few years, amaffed a small sum of twenty thousand pounds or thereabouts.

Joseph having received his little remainder of wages, and having flripped off his livery, was forced to borrow a frock and breeches of one of the fervants; (for he was fo beloved in the family, that they would all have lent him anything:) and being told by Peter, that he must not stay a moment longer in the house than was necessary to pack up his linen, which he easily did in a very narrow compass, he took a melancholy leave of his fellow-fervants, and fet out at feven in the evening.

noc

hat

as

any

our

ing

ad-

t [

nich

re-

t in

re.

may

nod

glad

the

very

me.

will

ainst

oray

for

nore

your

ake;

pta.

n he

eter

He had proceeded the length of two or

three streets before he absolutely determined with himself, whether he should leave the town that night, or, procuring a lodging, wait till the morning. At last, the moon shining very bright helped him to come to a resolution of beginning his journey immediately, to which likewise he had some other inducements; which the reader, without being a conjurer, cannot possibly guess, till we have given him those hints which it may be now proper to open.

in

P

ha

wh

the

pai

wh fan

Lo

for

love

She

hero

infai

for e

gree

muc.

and

fervi

exper

forta

indee

his pa

Th

C H A P. XI.

Of several new matters not expected.

IT is an observation sometimes made, that to indicate our idea of a simple sellow, we say, he is easily to be seen through; nor do I believe it a more improper denotation of a simple book. Instead of applying this to any particular performance, we chuse rather to remark the contrary in this history, where the scene opens itself by small degrees; and he is a sagacious reader who can see two chapters before him.

For this reason we have not hitherto hinted a matter which now seems necessary to be explained; since it may be wondered at, first that Joseph made such extraordinary haste out of town, which hath been already shewn; and secondly, which will be now shewn, that instead of proceeding to the habitation of his father and mother, or to his beloved fister Pamela, he chose rather to set out full speed to the Lady Booby's country seat, which he had left on his journey to London.

ed

he

g,

on

s c

di-

ner

be-

we

be

hat

OW,

nor

n ot

to

ther

here

and

two

nted

be o

first

rafte.

WII;

that

Be it known then, that in the same parish where this seat stood, there lived a young girl whom Joseph (tho' the best of sons and brothers) longed more impatiently to see than his parents or his sister. She was a poor girl, who had formerly been bred up in Sir John's samily; whence, a little before the journey to London, she had been discarded by Mrs Slipslop on account of her extraordinary beauty; for I never could find any other reason.

This young creature (who now lived with a farmer in the parish) had been always beloved by Joseph, and returned his affection. She was two years only younger than our hero. They had been acquainted from their infancy, and had conceived a very early liking for each other, which had grown to such a degree of affection, that Mr Adams had with much ado prevented them from marrying, and persuaded them to wait, till a sew years service and thrist had a little improved their experience, and enabled them to live comfortably together.

They followed this good man's advice, as indeed his word was little less than a law in his parish: for as he had shewn his parish-

ioners, by an uniform behaviour of thirtyfive years duration, that he had their good entirely at heart; fo they consulted him on every occasion, and very seldom asted con-

trary to his opinion.

Nothing can be imagined more tender than was the parting between these two lovers. A thousand sighs heaved the bosom of Joseph; a thousand tears distilled from the lovely eyes of Fanny, (for that was her name): though her modesty would only suffer her to admit his eager kisses, her violent love made her more than passive in his embraces; and she often pulled him to her breast with a soft pressure, which, though perhaps it would not have squeezed an insect to death, caused more emotion in the heart of Joseph than the closest Cornish hug could have done.

d

te

th

OI

ın

of

ve.

antho

ha

cho

COL

mo

mo

per

The reader may perhaps wonder that so fond a pair should during a twelvemonth's absence never converse with one another; indeed there was but one reason which did, or could have prevented them; and this was, that poor Fanny could neither write nor read; nor could she be prevailed upon to transsinit the delicacies of her tender and chaste passion, by the hand of an amanu-

enfis.

They contented themselves therefore with frequent enquiries after each other's health,

with a mutual confidence in each other's fidelity, and the prospect of their suture happiness.

Having explained these matters to our reader, and, as far as possible, satisfied all his doubts, we return to honest Joseph, whom we lest just set out on his travels by the light

of the moon.

Those who have read any romance or poetry ancient or modern, must have been informed, that love hath wings; by which they are not to understand, as some young ladies by mistake have done, that a lover can fly; the writers, by this ingenious allegory, intended to infinuate no more, than that lovers do not march like horse-guards; in short, that they put the best leg foremost; which our lufty youth, who could walk with any man, did so heartily on this occasion, that within four hours he reached a famous house of hospitality well known to the western traveller. It presents you a lion on a fign-post: and the master, who was christened Timotheus, is commonly called plain Tim. Some have conceived that he hath particularly chofen the lion for his fign, as he doth in countenance greatly refemble that magnanimous beaft, though his disposition favours more of the sweetness of the lamb. He is a person well received among all forts of men,

Jocoveme): er to

rty-

ood

n on

con-

and a foft d not more closest

hat fo onth's other; h did, is was, te not oon to er and

re with

being qualified to render himself agreeable to any; as he is well verfed in history and politics, hath a fmattering in law and divinity, cracks a good jest, and plays wonder-

fully well on the French-horn.

A violent storm of hail forced Joseph to take shelter in this inn, where he remembered Sir Thomas had dined in his way to town. Joseph had no sooner seated himself by the kitchen fire, than Timotheus, observing his livery, began to condole the loss of his late master; who was, he said, his very particular and intimate acquaintance, with whom he had cracked many a merry bottle, aye many a dozen in his time. He then remarked, that all those things were over now, all past, and just as if they had never been; and concluded with an excellent observation on the certainty of death, which his wife faid was indeed very true. A fellow now arrived at the fame inn with two horses, one of which he was leading farther down into the country to meet his master; these he put into the stable, and came and took his place by Joseph's fide, who immediately knew him to be the fervant of a neighbouring gentleman, who used to visit at their house.

This fellow was likewise forced in by the form; for he had orders to go twenty miles farther that evening, and luckily on the same

roa He COL hor pre rea dra

the

Con J U

they moo maki and notw proc He

to w

ed w loved lows and c mone le-

nd.

1-

r-

to.

r-

to elf

of

ry

th

le,

e-

w,

n;

on

ife

W

ne

to.

ut

ce

m

e-

he

es

ne

road which Joseph himself intended to take-He therefore embraced this opportunity of complimenting his friend with his master's horses, (notwithstanding he had received express commands to the contrary), which was readily accepted; and so, after they had drank a loving pot, and the storm was over, they set out together.

C H A P. XII.

Containing many surprising adventures which Joseph Andrews met with on the road, scarce credible to those who have never travelled in a stage-coach.

OTHING remarkable happened on the road, till their arrival at the inn to which the horses were ordered; whither they came about two in the morning. The moon then shone very bright; and Joseph making his friend a present of a pint of wine, and thanking him for the favour of his horse, notwithstanding all entreaties to the contrary, proceeded on his journey on soot.

He had not gone above two miles, charmed with the hopes of shortly seeing his beloved Fanny, when he was met by two fellows in a narrow lane, and ordered to stand and deliver. He readily gave them all the money he had, which was somewhat less

than two pounds; and told them he hoped they would be so generous as to return him a few shillings, to defray his charges on his way home.

to

to

e

a

in

th

· t

wh

Wif

coa

ma

alig

and

upr

' D

Upo

and

him

alm

an c

'im

your

One of the ruffians answered with an oath,

Yes, we will give you fomething prefently:

but first strip and be d-n'd to you.'----' Strip,' cried the other, ' or I'll blow your brains to the devil.' Joseph remembering that he had borrowed his coat and breeches of a friend, and that he should be ashamed of making any excuse for not returning them, replied, he hoped they would not infift on his clothes, which were not worth much, but confider the coldness of the night. 'You ' are cold, are you, rascal!' fays one of the robbers, 'I'll warm you with a vengeance;' and, damning his eyes, fnapt a pistol at his head; which he had no fooner done, than the other levelled a blow at him with his flick, which Joseph, who was expert at cudgel-playing, caught with his, and returned the favour so successfully on his adversary, that he laid him sprawling at his feet, and at the same instant received a blow from behind, with the butt-end of a pistol from the other villain, which felled him to the ground, and totally deprived him of his fenfes.

The thief who had been knocked down, had now recovered himfelf; and both together fell

to belabouring poor Joseph with their sticks, till they were convinced they had put an end to his miserable being: they then stript him entirely naked, threw him into a ditch, and

departed with their booty.

The poor wretch, who lay motionless a long time, just began to recover his fenses as a stage-coach came by. The postilion hearing a man's groans, fropt his horses, and told the coachman, he was certain there was a dead man lying in the ditch; for he heard him groan. 'Go on, firrah,' fays the coach. man, 'we are confounded late, and have no ' time to look after dead men.' A Lady, who heard what the postilion faid, and likewife heard the groan, called eagerly to the coachman, to itop and fee what was the matter. Upon which he bid the postilion alight, and look into the ditch. He did fo, and returned, That there was a man fitting upright as naked as ever he was born. ' J---fus,' cried the Lady, ' a naked man! ' Dear coachman, drive on and leave him.' Upon this the gentlemen got out of the coach; and Joseph begged them to have mercy upon him; for that he had been robbed, and almost beaten to death. 'Robbed!' cries an old gentleman; 'let us make all the hafte 'imaginable, or we shall be robbed too.' A young man, who belonged to the law, an-

his ath,

ped him

your ering ches amed hem,

ift on

uch,

You of the ince; at his than h his

ert at eturnerfary, and at

ehind, other d, and

n, had

T

CC

th

ge

na

po

off

aı

ed

the

ha

po

ing

agi

the

the lut

unl ing

duc

mai

celle

him

abor

this

two

and

favir

fwered, He wished they had passed by without taking any notice; but that now they might be proved to have been last in his company; if he should die, they might be called to fome account for his murder. He therefore thought it adviseable to fave the poor creature's life, for their own fakes, if possible; at least, if he died, to prevent the jury's finding that they fled for it. He was therefore of opinion, to take the man into the coach, and carry him to the next inn. The Lady infifted, That he should not come into the coach; that if they lifted him in, fhe would herfelf alight: for she had rather stay in that place to all eternity, than ride with a naked man. The coachman objected, That he could not fuffer him to be taken in, unless fomebody would pay a shilling for his carriage the four miles; which the two gentlemen refused to do. But the lawyer, who was afraid of fome mischief happening to himself if the wretch was left behind in that condition, faying, No man could be too cautious in these matters, and that he remembered very extraordinary cases in the books, threatened the coachman, and bid him deny taking him up at his peril; for that if he died, he should be indicted for his murder; and if he lived, and brought an action against him, he would willingly take a brief in it.

1

ith-

they

his

t be

He

the

es, if

t the

was

into

inn.

ome

n in,

ther

ride

cted,

n in,

r his gen-

who g to

that

cau-

nem-

ooks,

deny

if he

der;

rainit

n it.

These words had a sensible effect on the coachman, who was well acquainted with the person who spoke them; and the old gentleman above mentioned, thinking the naked man would afford him frequent opportunities of shewing his wit to the lady, offered to join with the company in giving a mug of beer for his fare; till partly alarmed by the threats of the one, and partly by the promifes of the other, and being, perhaps, a little moved with compassion at the poor creature's condition, who stood bleeding and shivering with the cold, he at length agreed; and Joseph was now advancing to the coach, where, feeing the lady, who held the flicks of her fan before her eyes, he abfolutely refused, miserable as he was, to enter, unless he was furnished with sufficient covering, to prevent giving the least offence to decency. So perfectly modelt was this young man; fuch mighty effects had the spotless example of the amiable Pamela, and the excellent fermons of Mr Adams, wrought upon him.

Though there were feveral great coats about the coach, it was not eafy to get over this difficulty which Joseph had started. The two gentlemen complained they were cold, and could not spare a rag; the man of wit saying, with a laugh, That charity began at

Vol. I. H

n

in

pa

CO

fet

eve

ha

for wit

fide

as I

beg

and

fig-1

to J

luntarily stript off a great coat, his only garment, at the same time swearing a great oath, (for which he was rebuked by the passengers) that he would rather ride in his shirt all his life, than suffer a fellow-creature to ly in so miserable a condition.

Joseph having put on the great coat, was lifted into the coach, which now proceeded on its journey. He declared himself almost dead with cold; which gave the man of wit an occasion to ask the lady, if she could not accommodate him with a dram. She answered with some resentment, She wondered at his asking her such a question; but assured him she never tasted any such thing.

The lawyer was enquiring into the circumstances of the robbery, when the coach stopt, and one of the russians putting a pistol in, demanded their money of the passengers;

who readily gave it them; and the lady, in her fright, delivered up a little filver bottle, of about a half pint fize, which the rogue, clapping it to his mouth, and drinking her health, declared held some of the best Nantz he had ever tasted: this the lady afterwards assured the company was the mistake of her maid; for that she had ordered her to fill the bottle with Hungary-water.

WO

end

the

the

ot-

an, ble,

his

less

nce

vo-

garath,

ers)

bis

n fo

was

eded

molt

wit

not

an-

ered

ured

cir-

oach piftol

gers;

As foon as the fellows were departed, the lawyer, who had, it feems, a cafe of piftols in the feat of the coach, informed the company, that if it had been day-light, and he could have come at his piftols, he would not have fubmitted to the robbery; he likewife fet forth, that he had often met highwaymen when he travelled on horfeback, but none ever durft attack him; concluding, that if he had not been more afraid for the lady than for himfelf, he should not have now parted with his money so easily.

As wit is generally observed to love to refide in empty pockets, so the gentleman; whose ingenuity we have above remarked, as soon as he had parted with his money, began to grow wonderfully facetious. He made frequent allusions to Adam and Eve, and said many excellent things on sign and sig-leaves; which, perhaps, gave more offence to Joseph than to any other in the company.

H 2

The lawyer likewise made several very pretty jests, without departing from his profession. He said, if Joseph and the lady were alone, he would be more capable of making a conveyance to her, as his affairs were not fettered with any incumbrance; he'd warrant, he foon fuffered a recovery by a writ of entry, which was the proper way. to create heirs in tail; that for his own part, he would engage to make fo firm a fettlement in a coach, that there should be no danger of an ejectment : with an inundation of the like gibberish, which he continued to vent till the coach arrived at an inn, where one fervant maid only was up in readiness to attend the coachman, and furnish him with cold meat and a dram. Joseph defired to alight, and that he might have a bed prepared for him, which the maid readily promifed to perform; and being a good-natured wench, and not so squeamish as the lady had been, the clapt a large faggot on the fire, and furnishing Joseph with a great coat belonging to one of the hoftlers, defired him to fit down and warm himself, whilst she made his bed. The coachman, in the mean time, took an opportunity to call up a furgeon, who lived within a few doors; after which, he reminded his passengers how late they were, and after

t! h

th by de th ap

wh mo hin and

che

his

feat ed of of the Toy mai

head then own M

ltret

tuat

they had taken their leave of Joseph, hurried him off as fast as he could.

ery

ro-

idy

of

irs

ce;

by

vay.

art,

tle-

no

ion

1 to

nere

ness

him

d to

ared

d to

neh,

een,

fur-

ging

OWN

bed.

an

ived

nded

after

The wench foon got Joseph to bed, and promised to use her interest to borrow him a shirt; but imagined, as she afterwards said, by his being so bloody, that he must be a dead man: she ran with all speed to hasten the surgeon, who was more than half dressed, apprehending that the coach had been overturned, and some gentleman or lady hurt. As soon as the wench had informed him at his window, that it was a poor foot-passenger who had been stripped of all he had, and almost murdered; he chid her for disturbing him so early, slipped off his clothes again, and very quietly returned to bed and to sleep.

Aurora now began to shew her blooming cheeks over the hills, whilst ten millions of feathered songsters, in jocund chorus, repeated odes a thousand times sweeter than those of our Laureat, and sung both the day and the song; when the matter of the inn, Mr Tow-wouse, arose, and learning from his maid an account of the robbery, and the stuation of his poor naked guest, he shook his head, and cried, 'Good lack a-day!' and then ordered the girl to carry him one of his own shirts.

Mrs Tow-wouse was just awake, and had firetched out her arms in vain to fold her

departed husband, when the maid entered the room. 'Who's there? Betty?' 'Yes, " Madam.' ' Where's your mafter?' ' He's ' without, Madam; he hath fent me for a ' fhirt to lend a poor naked man, who hath ' been robbed and murdered.' 'Touch one ' if you dare, you flut,' faid Mrs Tow-wouse: your master is a pretty fort of a man to ' take in naked vagabonds, and cloath them with his own cloaths. I shall have no such doings .- If you offer to touch any thing, I'll throw the chamber-pot at your head. Go, fend your master to me.' Yes, ' Madam,' answered Betty. As soon as he came in, she thus began: ' What the devil ' do you mean by this, Mr Tow-wouse? Am ' I to buy shirts to lend to a fet of scabby ' rafcals?' ' My dear,' faid Mr Tow-woule, ' this is a poor wretch.' 'Yes,' fays she, · I know it is a poor wretch; but what the devil have we to do with poor wretches? · The law makes us provide for too many ' already. We shall have thirty or forty poor wretches in red coats shortly.' My dear,' cries Tow-wouse, ' this man hath been rob-· bed of all he hath.' 'Well then,' fays she, where's his money to pay his reckoning! ' Why doth not fuch a fellow go to an ale-' house? I shall fend him packing as foon as 1 am up, I affure you.' My dear,' faid he,

ne

fh

fw

ful

Wa

cor

gu

tha

ver

Mr

· 115

flan

vote

that

have

bro

· Bet

ring

red

Yes,

le's

or a

nath

one

use:

n to

hem

fuch

any

your

Yes, as he

devil

? Am

cabby

vouie,

s she,

at the

tches?

many

7 poor

dear,

n rob.

oning!

an ale-

oon as

aid he,

common charity won't fuffer you to do that.' Common charity, a f—t!' fays she, common charity teaches us to provide for ourselves, and our families; and I and mine won't be ruined by your charity, I assure you.' Well,' says he, 'my dear, do as 'you will when you are up; you know I never contradict you.' No,' says she, 'if the devil was to contradict me, I would make the house too hot to hold him.'

With fuch like discourses they confumed near half an hour, whilft Betty provided a fhirt from the hoftler, who was one of her fweethearts, and put it on poor Joseph. The furgeon had likewise at last visited him, and waihed and dreffed his wounds, and was now come to acquaint Mr Tow-wouse, that his guest was in such extreme danger of his life, that he scarce faw any hopes of his recovery.—' Here's a pretty kettle of fish,' cries Mrs Tow-wouse, ' you have brought upon 'us! We are like to have a funeral at our ' own expence.' Tow-wouse, (who, notwithflanding his charity, would have given his vote as freely as ever he did at an election, that any other house in the kingdom should have quiet possession of his guest) answered, ' My dear, I am not to blame: he was ' brought hither by the stage-coach; and ' Betty had put him to bed before I was stir-'ring.' 'I'll Betty her,' fays she - At which,

with half her garments on, the other half under her arm, the fallied out in quest of the unfortunate Betty, whilst Tow-wouse and the surgeon went to pay a visit to poor Joseph, and enquire into the circumstances of this melancholy affair.

d

h

fe

ca

.]

6 2

r

· I

· h

· V

was

pof

Tor

adn

200

mak

bod

man

havi

land

with

M

C H A P XIII.

What happened to Joseph during his sickness at the inn, with the curious discourse between him and Mr Barnabas the parson of the parish.

A S foon as Joseph had communicated a particular history of the robbery, together with a short account of himself and his intended journey, he asked the surgeou, if he apprehended him to be in any danger: to which the surgeon very honestly answered, He seared he was, for that his pulse was very exalted and severish, and if his sever should prove more than symptomatic, it would be impossible to save him.' Joseph setching a deep sigh, cried, 'Poor Fanny,

'I would I could have lived to fee thee!

' but God's will be done.'

The furgeon then advised him, if he had any worldly affairs to settle, that he would do it as soon as possible; for though he hop'd he might recover, yet he thought himself

11-

n-

he

olr,

his

zels

be-

2 of

da

to-

and

Oil,

cer:

red,

Was

ever

, 10

leph

nny,

iee!

had

ould

op'd

nfelt

obliged to acquaint him he was in great danger; and if the malign concoction of his humours should cause a suscitation of his fever, he might soon grow delirious and incapable to make his will. Joseph answered, That it was impossible for any creature in the universe to be in a poorer condition than himself: for since the robbery, he had not one thing of any kind whatever, which he could call his own. I had, faid he, a poor little piece of gold, which they took away, that would have been a comfort to me in all my afflictions; but surely, Fanny, I want nothing to remind me of thee. I have thy dear image in my heart, and no

Joseph desired paper and pens to write a letter, but they were resused him; and he was advised to use all his endeavours to compose himself. They then lest him; and Mr Tow-wouse sent to a clergyman to come and administer his good offices to the soul of poor Joseph, since the surgeon despaired of making any successful applications to his body.

Mr Barnabas (for that was the clergyman's name) came as foon as fent for; and having first drank a dish of tea with the landlady, and afterwards a bowl of punch with the landlord, he walked up to the room where Joseph lay: but, finding him asleep, returned to take the other sneaker; which when he had finished, he again crept softly up to the chamber-door, and having opened it, heard the sick man talking to himself in

(1

6 17

6

(T

· t

(t

enc

To

ntti

all

and

he :

deli

bas

his

mu

ther

he t

hi in

· re

· H

. W.

a a

the gr

the following manner: ' O most adorable Pamela! most virtuous · fifter! whose example alone could enable " me to withstand all the temptations of ' riches and beauty, and to preferve my virtue pure and chafte, for the arms of my ' dear Fanny, if it had pleased Heaven that · I should ever have come into them. What riches, or honours, or pleasures can make ' us amends for the loss of innocence? Doth onot that alone afford us more confolation; than all worldly acquifitions? What but ' innocence and virtue could give any comfort to fuch a miserable wretch as I am? · Yet these can make me prefer this fick and · painful bed to all the pleasures I should have found in my lady's. These can make · me face death without fear; and though • I love my Fanny more than ever man lo-' ved a woman, these can teach me to refign myfelf to the divine will without repining. · O, thou delightful charming creature! if · Heaven had indulged thee to my arms, the · pooreit, humblest state, would have been a paradife; I could have lived with thee 12

eep,

hich

oftly.

ened

f in

10113

able

s of

vir-

that

Vhat

nake Ooth

tion;

om-

am?

and

ould

nake

nugh

n lo-

elign

ing.

, the

en a

ee !B

the lowest cottage, without envying the palaces, the dainties, or the riches of any man breathing. But I must leave thee, leave thee for ever, my dearest angel! I must think of another world; and I heartily pray thou may'lt meet comfort in this.'—Barnabas thought he had heard enough; so down stairs he went, and told Tow-wouse he could do his guest no service, for that he was very light-headed, and had attered nothing but a rhapsody of nonsense all the time he staid in the room.

The furgeon returned in the afternoon, and found his patient in a higher fever, as he faid, than when he left him, though not delirious: for notwithstanding Mr Barnabas's opinion, he had not been once out of his senses since his arrival at the inn.

Mr Barnabas was again fent for, and with much difficulty prevailed on to make another visit. As soon as he entered the room, he told Joseph, 'He was come to pray by him, and to prepare him for another world; 'in the first place therefore, he hoped he had 'repented of all his sins.' Joseph answered, 'He hoped he had; but there was one thing 'which he knew not whether he should call a sin; if it was, he feared he should die in 'the commission of it; and that was the regret of parting with a young woman,

' whom he loved as tenderly as he did his heart-strings.' Barnabas bade him be affured, that any repining at the divine will was one of the greatest fins he could com-' mit; that he ought to forget all carnal affections, and think of better things.' Jofeph faid, ' That neither in this world nor ' the next, he could forget his Fanny; and that the thought, however grievous, of ' parting from her for ever, was not half fo ' tormenting, as the fear of what the would ' fuffer, when the knew his misfortune.' Barnabas faid, ' That fuch fears argued a dif-' fidence and despondence very criminal; ' that he must divest himself of all human ' paffions, and fix his heart above.' Joseph answered, 'That was what he defired to · do, and should be obliged to him if he ' would enable him to accomplish it.' Barnabas replied, 'That must be done by grace.' Joseph befought him to discover how he might attain it. Barnabas answered, 'By ' prayer and faith.' He then questioned him concerning his forgiveness of the thieves. Joseph antwered, ' He feared that ' was more than he could do: for nothing · would give him more pleafure than to hear ' they were taken.' 'That,' cries Barnabas, ' is for the fake of justice.' 'Yes,' faid Joseph; 'but if I was to met them again, I

ce

foi

gr

bu

to

his

af-

will

m-

af-

Jo-

nor

and

of

f fo

uld

Bar-

dif-

al;

nan

eph

1 10

Bar-

ace.'

he

By

100-

the

that

hing

rna-

faid

in, l

am afraid I should attack them, and kill them too if I could.' Doubtlefs,' anfwered Barnabas, ' it is lawful to kill a thief: but can you fay, you forgive them as a Christian ought?' Joseph defired to know what that forgiveness was. 'That is,' answered Barnabas, 'to forgive them asas-it is to forgive them as - in short, it is to forgive them as a Christian.' Joseph replied, ' He forgave them as much as he could.' 'Well, well,' faid Barnabas, 'that will do.' He then demanded of him, ' if he remembered any more fins unrepented of; and if he did, he defired him to make halte and repent of them as fait as he ' could; that they might repeat over a few * prayers together.' Joseph answered, 'He ' could not recollect any great crimes he had ' been guilty of, and that those he had committed he was fincerely forry for.' Barnabas faid, that was enough, and then proceeded to prayer with all the expedition he was mafter of; fome company then waiting for him below in the parlour, where the ingredients for punch were all in readinels: but no one would fqueeze the oranges till he

Joseph complained he was dry, and defired a little tea; which Barnabas reported to Mrs Tow-wouse, who answered, 'She Vol. I.

" had just done drinking it, and could not be sloping all day;' but ordered Betty to

carry him up fome fmall beer.

Betty obeyed her mistres's commands; but Joseph, as soon as he had tasted it, said, he feared it would encrease his sever, and that he longed very much for tea. To which the good-natur'd Betty answered, he should have tea, if there was any in the land; she accordingly went and bought him some herself, and attended him with it; where we will leave her and Joseph together for some time, to entertain the reader with other matters.

Wa

an.

for

. I

11

11

feer

grea

poo:

not

inde

ture

that

preff

Her

thenc

her n

He

1

C H A P. XIV.

Being very full of adventures, which succeeded each other at the inn.

I was now the dusk of the evening, when a grave person rode into the inn, and committing his horse to the hostler, went directly to the kitchin, and having called for a pipe of tobacco, took his place by the sire-side; where several persons were likewise ascendide.

The discourse ran altogether on the robbery which was committed the night before, and on the poor wretch, who lay above in the dreadful condition in which we have al-

.

ready feen him. Mrs Tow-wouse said, 'She wondered what the devil Tom Whipwell ' meant by bringing fuch guests to her house ' when there were so many ale-houses on the ' road proper for their reception. But she ' affured him, if he died the parish should be 'at the expence of the funeral.' She added, ' Nothing would ferve the fellow's turn but ' tea, the would affure him.' Betty, who was just returned from her charitable office, answered, she believed he was a gentleman, for the never faw a finer skin in her life. ' Pox on his skin!' replied Mrs Tow-wouse, 'I suppose that is all we are like to have for the reckoning. I defire no fuch gentleman: ' should ever call at the Dragon,' (which, it feems, was the fign of the inn.

The gentleman lately arrived discovered a great deal of emotion at the distress of this poor creature, whom he observed to be fallen not into the most compassionate hands. And indeed, if Mrs Tow-wouse had given no utterance to the sweetness of her temper, Nature had taken such pains in her countenance, that Hogarth himself never gave more ex-

pression to a picture.

not

to

ds:

aid,

and

ich

ould

the

her-

we:

ome

nat-

eded

when

and

it di-

for a

fire-

le al-

rob-

efore,

ve in

ve al-

Her person was short, thin and crooked. Her forehead projected in the middle, and thence descended in a declivity to the top of her nose, which was sharp and red, and would

1.2

JCO THE ADVENTURES OF

have hung over her lips, had not Nature turned up the end of it. Her lips were two bits of skin, which, whenever she spoke, she drew together in a purse. Her chin was peaked; and at the upper-end of that skin, which composed her cheeks, stood two bones, that almost hid a pair of small red eyes: add to this a voice most wonderfully adapted to the sentiments it was to convey, being both loud and hoarse.

6

. 1

r

. 1

· 1

the

6 6

· P

()

· u

'a

m

· a

tor,

· m

· po

faid

'I
th

It is not easy to say, whether the gentleman had conceived a greater diflike for his landlady, or compassion for her unhappy guest. He enquired very earnestly of the furgeon, who was now come into the kitchen, whether he had any hopes of his recovery? he begged him to use all possible means towards it, telling him, 'it was the duty of " men of all professions, to apply their skill ' gratis for the relief of the poor and necelfitous. The furgeon answered, he should take proper care: but he defied all the furegeons in London to do him any good. ' Pray, Sir,' faid the gentleman, ' what are his wounds?' 'Why, do you know any ' thing of wounds?' faid the furgeon, (wink. ing upon Mrs Tow-woufe.) 'Sir, I have ' a fmall fmattering in furgery,' answered the gentleman. 'A finattering, - ho, ho,

JOSEPH ANDREWS. 101

ho!' faid the furgeon, 'I believe it is a fmattering indeed.'

The company were all attentive, expecting to hear the doctor, who was what they call.

a dry fellow, expose the gentleman.

re

he

k-

ch

at

he

id

e-

iis

py he

n,

oof

ill

ef-

ld

r-

d.

re

k.

ve ed

C.

He began therefore with an air of triumph: 'I suppose, Sir, you have travelled.' 'No, ' really, Sir,' faid the gentleman. 'Ho!' then you have practifed in the hospitals. 'perhaps.' 'No, Sir.' 'Hum! not that neither? Whence, Sir, then, if I may be fo bold to enquire, have you got your 'knowledge in furgery?' 'Sir,' answered the gentleman, 'I do not pretend to much: but the little I know, I have from books.'-Books!' cries the doctor, - What, I fup-'pose you have read Galen and Hippocrates!' 'No, Sir,' faid the gentleman. 'How, you ' understand furgery,' answers the Doctor, 'and not read Galen and Hippocrates!' 'Sir,' cries the other, 'I-believe there are. ' many furgeons who have never read these ' authors.' 'I believe fo too,' fays the doctor, 'more shame for them: but thanks to ' my education I have them by heart, and very feldom go without them both in my: 'pocket.' 'They are pretty large books,' faid the gentleman. 'Aye,' faid the doctor, 'I believe I know how large they are better 'than you.' At which he fell a winking, and the whole company burst into a laugh.

I

TO2 THE ADVENTURES OF

The Doctor purfuing his triumph, asked the gentleman, if he did not understand phyfic as well as furgery.' 'Rather better,' answered the gentleman. 'Ay, like enough,' cries the Doctor with a wink. ' Why, I know a little of physic too.' I wish I knew half fo much,' faid Tow-wouse, 'I'd never wear an apron again.' Why, I believe, landlord, cries the Doctor, 'there are few men, though I fay it, within twelve miles of the place, that handle a fever better. Veniente accurrite morbo: that is my · method. I suppose, brother, you underfland Latin?' ' A little,' fays the gentleman. Ay, and Greek now I'll warrant · you: Ton dapomibominos poluflosboio Tha-· lasses. But I have almost forgot these things; I could have repeated Homer by heart once.' 'Ifags, the gentleman has caught a traitor,' fays Mrs Tow-woufe; at which they all fell a-laughing.

The gentleman, who had not the least affection for joking, very contentedly suffered the Doctor to enjoy his victory; which he did with no small satisfaction: and having sufficiently sounded his depth, told him, he was thoroughly convinced of his great learning and abilities; and that he would be obliged to him, if he would let him know his opinion of his patient's case above stairs. Sir,' says the Doctor, 'his ease is that of a

joy, he co Wi fome

they !

· d

· p

. 0

n

· th

W W

· pi

· de

it.

whe

ken him

this

fear

had fwea

men

fearc

thing

tione

laid y

to Jo

his i

H

ked

ind

er,

gh,

fh I

I'd

y, I here

elve

bet-

my

der-

ntle-

rant

Tha-

thele

has

; at

ft af-

Fered

h he

aving

n, he

earn-

e ob-

w his

fairs.

t of a

dead man. The contusion on his head has perforated the internal membrane of the occiput, and divelicated that radical small minute invisible nerve, which coheres to the pericranium; and this was attended with a fever at first symptomatic, then pneumatic; and he is at length grown delirious, or delirious, as the vulgar express it.

He was proceeding in this learned manner, when a mighty noise interrupted him. Some young fellows in the neighbourhood had taken one of the thieves, and were bringing him into the inn. Betty ran up stairs with this news to Joseph; who begged they might fearch for a little piece of broken gold, which had a ribband tied to it, and which he could swear to amongst all the hoards of the richest men in the universe.

Notwithstanding the fellow's persisting in his innocence, the mob were very buly in searching him, and presently, among other things, pulled out the piece of gold just mentioned; which Betty no sooner saw, than the laid violent hands on it, and conveyed it up to Joseph, who received it with raptures of joy, and hugging it in his bosom, declared, he could now die contented.

Within a few minutes afterwards, came in fome other fellows, with a bundle which they had found in a ditch, and which was

indeed the cloaths which had been stripped off from Joseph, and the other things they had taken from him.

wit

who

the

mer

tun

per

the.

ban

kept

and

and

likel

cloa

obfe

canf

white

thefe

the !

the the

on ?

1

· car

e in

' per

on not

old

T

The gentleman no fooner faw the coat, than he declared he knew the livery; and if it had been taken from the poor creature above stairs, defired he might see him; for that he was very well acquainted with the family to whom that livery belonged.

He was accordingly conducted up by Betty; but what, reader, was the furprise on both fides, when he saw Joseph was the person in bed; and when Joseph discovered the face of his good friend Mr Abraham Adams!

It would be impertinent to infert a discourse which chiefly turned on the relation of matters already well known to the reader: for as soon as the curate had satisfied Joseph concerning the perfect health of his Fanny, he was on his side very inquisitive into all the particulars which had produced this unfortunate accident.

To return therefore to the kitchen, where a great variety of company were now affembled from all the rooms of the house, as well as the neighbourhood; so much delight do men take in contemplating the countenance of a thief.

Mr Tow-wouse began to rub his hands

with pleafure, at feeing fo large an affembly: who would, he hoped, shortly adjourn into feveral apartments, in order to discourse over the robbery, and drink a health to all bonest men. But Mrs Tow-wouse, whose missortune it was commonly to fee things a little perverfely, began to rail at those who brought the fellow into her house; telling her husband, they were very likely to thrive, who kept a house of entertainment for beggars and thieves.

The mob had now finished their fearch; and could find nothing about the captive likely to prove any evidence: for as to the cloaths, though the mob were very well fatisfied with that proof; yet as the furgeon observed, they could not convict him, because they were not found in his custody; to which Barnabas agreed, and added, that these were bona waviata, and belonged to the lord of the manor.

'How,' fays the furgeon, 'do you fay ' these goods belong to the lord of the ma-'nor?' 'I do,' cried Barnabas. 'Then 'I deny it,' fays the furgeon. ' What ' can the lord of the manor have to do in the case? will any one attempt to persuade me that what a man finds is 'not his own!' 'I have heard,' fays an old fellow in the corner, ' justice Wife-

pped they

coat, nd if ture for

by prile s the ered ham

dif-

tion der: feph nny, the for-

here emweil do ince

inds

fone fay, that if every man had his right, whatever is found belongs to the King of London.' That may be true, fays Barnabas, in some sense: for the law makes a difference between things stolen and things found; for a thing may be stolen that never is found; and a thing may have found that never was stolen. Now

be found that never was stolen. Now goods that are both stolen and found are

"waviata; and they belong to the lord of the manor." So the lord of the manor

is the receiver of stolen goods,' fays the Doctor; at which there was an universal

laugh, being first begun by himself.

While the prisoner, by persisting in his innocence, had almost (as there was no evidence against him) brought over Barnabas, the surgeon, sow-wouse, and several others to his side; Betty informed them that they had overlooked a little piece of gold, which she had carried up to the man in bed; and which he offered to swear to amongst a million, aye, amongst ten thousand. This immediately turned the scale against the prisoner; and every one now concluded him guilty. It was resolved, therefore, to keep him secured that night, and early in the morning to carry him before a justice.

She

a. u

ti

whit hand between the v

tance

T

Tow forbi a Ch brou antip misfo Tow ' gen ' abo

' paid ' who

C H A P XV.

his

true,

law

stolen

e sto.

may

Now

d are

ord of

nanor

s the

verfal

n his

o evi-

nabas, others

they

which; and

a mil-

mme-

loner;

guilty.

ing to

Shewing how Mrs Tow-wouse was a little mollified: and how officious Mr Barnabas and the surgeon were to prosecute the thies: with a dissertation accounting for their zeal and that of many other persons not mentioned in this history.

BETTY told her mistress, she believed the man in bed was a greater man than they took him for: for besides the extreme whiteness of his skin, and the softness of his hands, she observed a very great familiarity between the gentleman and him; and added, she was certain they were intimate acquaintance, if not relations.

This fomewhat abated the severity of Mrs Tow-wouse's countenance. She said, God forbid she should not discharge the duty of a Christian, since the poor gentleman was brought to her house. She had a natural antipathy to vagabonds; but could pity the misfortunes of a Christian as soon as another. Tow-wouse said, 'If the traveller be a 'gentleman, though he hath no money 'about him now, we shall most likely be 'paid hereafter, so you may begin to score 'whenever you will.' Mrs Tow-wouse answered, 'Hold your simple tongue, and

don't instruct me in my business. I am forry for the gentleman's mis-

To

ne

00

he

fer

W

Ba

fer

do

fer

an of

cel

by

get

caf

of,

in

he

to i

tear

mig

Ada

plai

ran

fortune with all my heart; and I hope the

villain who hath used him so barbarously

will be hanged. Betty, go fee what he wants. God forbid he should want any

thing in my house.'

Barnabas and the fargeon went up to Joseph, to satisfy themselves concerning the piece of gold. Joseph was with difficulty prevailed upon to shew it them; but would by no intreaties be brought to deliver it out of his own possession. He however attested this to be the same which had been taken from him; and Betty was ready to swear to the finding it on the thief.

The only difficulty that remained, was how to produce this gold before the juffice: for as to carrying Joseph himself, it seemed impossible; nor was there any great likelihood of obtaining it from him; for he had fastened it with a ribband to his arm, and solemnly vowed, that nothing but irresistible force should ever separate them; in which resolution, Mr Adams, clenching a fist rather less than the knuckle of an ox, declared he would support him.

A dispute arose on this occasion concerning evidence, not very necessary to be related here; after which the surgeon dressed Mr

r

Joseph's head; still persisting in the imminent danger in which his patient lay; but concluding with a very important look, that he began to have fome hopes; that he should fend him a fanative soporiferous draught, and would fee him in the morning. After which Barnabas and he departed, and left Mr Jo-

feph and Mr Adams together.

I am

mis

e the

oufly

it he

any

p to

g the

culty

rould

t out

efted

aken

ar to

was stice:

emed ikeli-

had

and ftible

hich

ather d he

cern-

lated Mr

Adams informed Joseph of the occasion of this journey which he was making to London, namely, to publish three volumes of fermons; being encouraged, as he faid, by an advertisement lately set forth by a society of bookfellers, who proposed to purchase any copies offered to them at a price to be fettled by two persons; but tho' he imagined he should get a confiderable fum of money on this occasion, which his family were in urgent need of, he protested he would not leave Joseph in his prefent condition: finally, he told him he had nine shillings and threepence halfpenny in his pocket, which he was welcome to use as he pleased.

This goodness of parson Adams brought tears into Joseph's eyes; he declared he had now a fecond reason to desire life, that he might shew his gratitude to fuch a friend. Adams bade him be chearful, for that he plainly faw the furgeon, befides his ignorance, defired to make a merit of curing him,

VOL. I.

though the wounds in his head, he perceived, were by no means dangerous; that he was convinced he had no fever, and doubted not but he would be able to travel in a day or two.

m

pi

th

fir

th

fre

be

no

pl

po

fo

tu

be

do

th

th

te

T

CC

vi

ha

These words infused a spirit into Joseph; he faid, he found himself very fore from the bruifes; but had no reason to think any of his bones injured, or that he had received any harm in his infide; unless that he felt fomething very odd in his stomach: but he knew not whether that might not arise from not having eaten one morfel for above twentyfour hours. Being then asked if he had any inclination to eat, he answered in the affirma-Then Parson Adams defired him to name what he had the greatest fancy for; whether a poached egg, or chicken broth: he answered, he could eat both very well; but that he feemed to have the greatest appetite for a piece of boiled beef and cabbage.

Adams was pleased with so perfect a confirmation that he had not the least fever; but advised him to a lighter diet, for that evening. He accordingly ate either a rabbit, or a fowl, I never could with any tolerable certainty discover which: after this, he was, by Mrs Tow-wouse's order, conveyed into a better bed, and equipped with one of her

husband's shirts.

JOSEPH ANDREWS.

In the morning early, Barnabas and the furgeon came to the inn, in order to fee the thief conveyed before the justice. They had confumed the whole night in debating what measures they should take to produce the piece of gold in evidence against him: for they were both extremely zealous in the bufiness, though neither of them were in the least interested in the prosecution; neither of them had ever received any private injury from the fellow, nor had either of them ever been suspected of loving the public well enough, to give them a fermon or a dofe of

physic for nothing.

ed,

ras

ot

or

he

of

ed

elt

he

m

y-

1 y

a-

to

r;

1;

)-

)-

1.

it

t,

e

5,

a

r

To help our reader therefore as much as pollible to account for this zeal, we must inform him, that, as this parish was fo unfortunate as to have no lawyer in it, there had been a constant contention between the two doctors, spiritual and physical, concerning their abilities in a science, in which, as neither of them professed it, they had equal pretensions to dispute each other's opinions. These disputes were carried on with great contempt on both fides, and had almost divided the parish; Mr Tow-wouse and one half of the neighbours inclined to the furgeon, and Mrs Tow-wouse with the other half to the parson. The surgeon drew his knowledge from those inestimable foun-

K 2

110

ali

nd

pe

WI

· or

OU

of

Li

flie

he

ini

ric

th

an

rea

no

ha

th

L

tains, called the Attorney's Pocket companion, and Mr Jacob's Law-tables; Barnabas trusted entirely to Wood's institutes. It happened on this occasion, as was pretty frequently the case, that these two learned men differed about the sufficiency of evidence: the doctor being of opinion, that the maid's oath would convict the prisoner without producing the gold; the parson è contra, totis viribus. To display their parts therefore before the justice and the parish, was the sole movive which we can discover to this zeal, which both of them pretended to have for public justice.

O Vanity! how little is thy force acknowledged, or thy operations differred! How wantonly dost thou deceive mankind under different difguifes! Sometimes thou doft wear the face of pity, fometimes of generofity: nay, thou halt the affurance even to put on those glorious ornaments which belong only to heroic virtue. Thou odious deformed monster! whom priests have railed at, philosophers despised, and poets ridiculed: is there a wretch fo abandoned as to own thee for an acquaintance in public? yet how few will refuse to enjoy thee in private! nay thou art the pursuit of most men through their lives. The greatest villainies are daily practifed to please thee: nor is the meanest thief below, or the greatest hero above thy

113

notice. Thy embraces are often the fole alm and fole reward of the private robbery, nd the plundered province. It is to pamper up thee, thou harlot, that we attempt to withdraw from others what we do not want, or to withhold from them what they do. All our passions are thy slaves. Avarice itself is often no more than thy handmaid, and even Lust thy pimp. The bully Fear, like a coward, slies before thee, and Joy and Grief hide their heads in thy presence.

I know thou wilt think, that whilft I abuse thee, I court thee; and that thy love hath inspired me to write this farcastical panegyric on thee: but thou art deceived, I value thee not of a farthing; nor will it give me any pain, if thou shouldst prevail on the reader to censure this digression as arrant nonsense: for know, to thy consustion, that I have introduced thee for no other purpose than to lengthen out a short chapter; and so

I return to my history.

22-

Das

p.

re-

en

lie

th

u-

12.

re

ve

ch

ic

V=

W

er

It

00

to

C-

1s

n

C H A P. XVI.

The escape of the thief. Mr Adams's disappointment. The arrival of two very extraordinary personages, and the introduction of parson Adams to parson Barnabas.

B ARNABAS and the furgeon being returned, as we have faid, to the inn, in order to convey the thief before the justice, were greatly concerned to find a small accident had happened, which somewhat disconcerted them; and this was no other than the thief's escape, who had modestly withdrawn himself by night, declining all ostentation, and not chusing, in imitation of some great men, to distinguish himself at the expence of being pointed at.

When the company had retired the evening before, the thief was detained in a room where the constable, and one of the young fellows who took him, were planted as his guard. About the second watch, a general complaint of drowth was made both by the prisoner and his keepers; among whom it was at last agreed, that the constable should remain on duty, and the young fellow call up the tapster; in which disposition the latter apprehended not the least danger, as the constable was well armed, and could besides

the phis l

T roon heac by f the 1 faff duce char inco felf, with the thou B fom no r of I refe ter, eure boar

ing

lite

for

WOI

the

Win

JOSEPH ANDREWS. 11

easily summon him back to his assistance, if the prisoner made the least attempt to gain

his liberty.

ap.

ra-

n of

ing

, 111

ice,

hat

her

ftly

all

101

the

en-

om

ing his

ral the

it uld

call

tter

the

des

The young fellow had not long left the room, before it came into the constable's head, that the prisoner might leap on him by surprise, and thereby preventing him of the use of his weapons, especially the long staff in which he chiefly consided, might reduce the success of a struggle to an equal chance. He wisely therefore, to prevent this inconvenience, slipped out of the room himself, and locked the door, waiting without with his staff in his hand, ready listed to fell the unhappy prisoner, if by ill fortune he should attempt to break out.

But human life, as hath been discovered by some great man or other, (for I would by no means be understood to affect the honour of making any such discovery) very much resembles a game at Ches: for as in the latter, while a gamester is too attentive to secure himself very strongly on one side the

ter, while a gamester is too attentive to secure himself very strongly on one side the board, he is apt to leave an unguarded opening on the other; so doth it often happen in life; and so did it happen on this occasion: for whilst the cautious constable with such

wonderful fagacity had possessed himself of the door, he most unhappily forgot the

window.

The thief, who plyed on the other fide, no fooner perceived this opening, than he began to move that way; and finding the paffage eafy, he took with him the young fellow's hat; and without any ceremony, stepped into the street, and made the best of

his way.

The young fellow returning with a double mug of strong beer, was a little surprised to find the constable at the door; but much more fo, when, the door being opened, he perceived the prisoner had made his escape, and which way. He threw down the beer, and without uttering any thing to the constable, except a hearty curse or two, he nimbly leaped out at the window, and went again in pursuit of his prey; being very unwilling to lofe the reward which he had affured himself of.

The constable hath not been discharged of fuspicion on this account: it hath been faid, that not being concerned in the taking the thief, he could not have been entitled to any part of the reward, if he had been convicted; that the thief had feveral guineas in his pocket; that it was very unlikely he should have been guilty of fuch an overfight; that his pretence for leaving the room was abfurd; that it was his constant maxim, that a wis man never refused money on any conditions;

that rote

Bu fuch of hi furec mati opin deed

A

man Mr ? furge liable it wa forte that ment

follo foc for of · To na! an

M

lofe bei vo

· be

JOSEPH ANDREWS.

that at every election he always had fold his

rote to both parties, &c.

But notwithstanding these and many other fuch allegations, I am fufficiently convinced of his innocence; having been politively affured of it, by those who received their informations from his own mouth; which, in the opinion of some moderns, is the best and in-

deed only evidence.

All the family were now up, and with many others affembled in the kitchen, where Mr Tow-wouse was in some tribulation; the furgeon having declared, that by law he was liable to be indicted for the thief's escape, as it was out of his house: he was a little comforted however by Mr Barnabas's opinion, that as the escape was by night, the indictment would not ly.

Mrs fow-woule delivered herfelf in the following words: 'Sure never was fuch a ' fool as my husband! would any other per-' fon living have left a man in the cultody of fuch a drunken drowfy blockhead as. 'Tom Suckbribe!' (which was the constable's ' name:) and if he could be indicted without ' any harm to his wife and children, I should 'be glad of it.' (Then the bell rung in Joseph's room.) 'Why, Betty, John, Cham-' berlain, where the devil are you all? Have 'you no ears, or no conscience, not to tend

fide. an he g the oung nony,

elt of

ouble ed to nuch I, he cape,

beer, con-, he went unlaf-

d of aid, the any ed; OC-

ave his rd: vif:

ns;

the fick better?——See what the gentleman wants; why don't you go yourfelf, Mr Tow-wouse? but any one may die for you; you have no more feeling than a deal-board. If a man lived a fortnight in your house without spending a penny, you would never put him in mind of it. See whether he drinks tea or coffee for breakfast. 'Yes, my dear,' cried Tow-wouse. She then asked the doctor and Mr Barnabas what morning's draught they chose, who answered they had a pot of cyder-and at the

fire; which we will leave them merry over,

and return to Joseph. He had rose pretty early this morning: but though his wounds were far from threatening any danger, he was fo fore with the bruises, that it was impossible for him to think of undertaking a journey yet; Mr Adams therefore, whose stock was visibly decreafed with the expences of supper and breakfast, and which could not survive that day's fcoring, began to confider how it was possible to recruit it. At last he cried, 'He · had luckily hit on a fure method; and ' though it would oblige him to return him-· felf home together with Joseph, it mattered onot much.' He then fent for Tow-woule, and taking him into another room, told him, ' He wanted to borrow three guineas, for

whis watch value in iff to his voice tha

' null'
' pot'
' anc
' lum
' dot
' neft
' mo
' gre
' at l

' been
' man
' my
' prin
' exac

To
the p

' that' kind ' was ' tain ' three

WO!

entle.

irfelf.

ie for

ian a

ghtin

, you

reak-

ouse.

nabas

who

at the

over.

ning:

reat-

1 the

n to

y de-

and

that

was

· He

and

him-

tered

oufe,

him,

, for

Mr

See

which he would put ample fecurity into 'his hands.' Tow-wouse, who expected a watch, or ring, or fomething of double the value, answered, 'He believed he could fur-'nish him.' Upon which Adams, pointing to his faddle-bag, told him, with a face and voice full of folemnity, 'that there were in that bag no less than nine volumes of ma-' nuscript fermons, as well worth a hundred ' pound as a shilling was worth twelvepence, ' and that he would deposit one of the volumes in his hands by way of pledge; not ' doubting but that he would have the ho-'nefty to return it on his repayment of the 'money; for otherwise he would be a very ' great lofer, feeing that every volume would 'at least bring him ten pounds, as he had been informed by a neighbouring clergy-'man in the country: for,' faid he, 'as to 'my own part, having never yet dealt in ' printing, I do not pretend to ascertain the ' exact value of fuch things.'

Tow-wouse, who was a little surprised at the pawn, said (and not without some truth) that he was no judge of the price of such kind of goods: and as for money, he really was very short.' Adams answered, 'Certainly he would not scruple to lend him three guineas on what was undoubtedly worth at least ten.' The landlord replied,

he did not believe he had fo much money

in the house, and besides he was to make up

a fum. He was very confident the books

were of much higher value, and heartily forry it did not fuit him.' He then cried out, 'Coming, Sir!' though nobody called; and ran down stairs without any fear of breating his pack

breaking his neck.

Poor Adams was extremely dejected at this disappointment, nor knew he what farther stratagem to try. He immediately applied to his pipe, his constant friend and comfort in his afflictions; and leaning over the rails he devoted himself to meditation, assisted by the inspiring sumes of tobacco.

He had on a night-cap drawn over his wig, and a fhort great coat, which half covered his caffock; a drefs which, added to fomething comical enough in his countenance, composed a figure likely to attract the eyes of those who were not over-given to obser-

vation.

Whilst he was smoaking his pipe in this posture, a coach and six, with a numerous attendance, drove into the inn. There alighted from the coach a young fellow and a brace of pointers, after which another young fellow leapt from the box, and shook the former by the hand; and both, together with the dogs, were instantly conducted by

Mr as wit

'J

' t:

h

if if the m

' ha

Po

fo be

ha

man yo

V

121

noney
lke up
books
artily
cried
alled;
ar of

et this erther ied to ort in ils he y the

wig, vered omeance, eyes bler-

this rous re a- and other hook other d by

Mr Tow-wouse into an apartment; whither as they passed, they entertained themselves with the following short facetious dialogue:

'You are a pretty fellow for a coachman, ' lack!' fays he from the coach; ' you had 'almost overturned us just now.' 'Pox ' take you,' fays the coachman, 'if I had only broke your neck, it would have been faving ' fomebody else the trouble: but I should ' have been forry for the pointers.' 'Why, 'you fon of a b ---,' answered the other, 'if nobody should shoot better than you, ' the pointers would be of no use.' D -- n 'me,' fays the coachman, 'I will shoot ' with you five guineas a shot.' You be ' hanged,' fays the other, ' for five guineas 'you shall shoot at my a-.' 'Done,' fays the coachman, 'I'll pepper you better than ' ever you was pepper'd by Jenny Bouncer.' ' Pepper your grandmother,' fays the other, ' here's Tow-wouse will let you shoot at him ' for a thilling a-time.' 'I know his Honour 'better,' cries Tow-woule, 'I never faw 'a furer shot at a partridge. Every man ' misses now and then; but if I could shoot ' half as well as his Honour, I would defire ' no better livelihood than I could get by 'my gun.' 'Pox on you,' faid the coachman, ' you demolish more game now than ' your head's worth. There's a bitch, Tow-VOL. I.

wouse, by G—, she never blinked * a bird in her life.' I have a puppy not a year old shall hunt with her for a hundred,' cries the other gentleman. 'Done,' says the coachman, 'but you will be poxed before you make the bett. If you have a mind for a bett,' cries the coachman, 'I will match my spotted dog with your white bitch for a hundred, play or pay.' Done,'

c m

6 D

Bar

who

ed 1

· li

'k

re

· I

· ir

and

the

the

gre

tere

con

exc

cor

for pin

tion

cle

ed

on

1

'fays the other, 'and I'll run Baldface against Slouch with you for another.'
'No,' cries he from the box, 'but I'll ven-

' ture Miss Jenny against Baldsace or Han-'nibal either.' 'Go to the devil,' cries he from the coach, 'I will make every bett

' your own way, to be fure! I will match 'Hannibal with Slouch for a thousand, if

' you dare, and I fay done first.'

They were now arrived, and the reader will be very contented to leave them, and repair to the kitchen, where Barnabas, the furgeon, and an excifeman were fmoaking their pipes over fome cyder-and, and where the fervants, who attended the two noble gentlemen we have just feen alight, were now arrived.

'Tom,' cries one of the footmen, there's Parson Adams smoaking his pipe in the gallery.' Yes,' says Tom, 'I pulled off

^{*} To blink, is a term used to fignify the deg's passing by a bird without pointing at it.

my hat to him, and the Parson spoke to me.'

bird

year

red,'

s the

efore

mind

will

hite

ine,'

her.'

ven-

lan-

s he

bett

atch

ider

the

ing

ble

OW

re's

the

off

8,8

'Is the gentleman a clergyman then?' fays Barnabas, (for his caffock had been tied up when he first arrived.) 'Yes, Sir,' answered the footman, 'and one there be but few 'like.' 'Aye,' faid Barnabas, 'if I had 'known it sooner, I should have defired his 'company; I would always shew a proper 'respect for the cloth; but what say you?' Doctor, shall we adjourn into a room, and 'invite him to take part of a bowl of punch?'

This propofal was immediately agreed to and executed; and Parfon Adams accepting the invitation, much civility passed between the two clergymen, who both declared the great honour they had for the cloth. They had not been long together, before they entered into a discourse on small tithes, which continued a full hour, without the dostor or exciseman's having one opportunity to offer a word.

It was then proposed to begin a general conversation, and the exciseman opened on foreign affairs; but a word unluckily dropping from one of them introduced a differtation on the hardships suffered by the inferior clergy; which, after a long duration, concluded with bringing the nine volumes of fermons on the carpet.

L 2

Barnabas greatly discouraged poor Adams: he faid, the age was fo wicked, that nobody read fermons: 'Would you think it, Mr · Adams,' faid he, ' I once intended to print a volume of fermons myfelf, and they had the approbation of two or three bitheps; · but what do you think a bookfeller offered " me?' Twelve guineas, perhaps,' cried Adams. ' Not twelve pence, I affure you,' answered Barnabas; ' nay the dog resused · me a Concordance in exchange. - At · last I offered to give him the printing them, for the fake of dedicating them to that ' very gentleman who just now drove his own coach into the inn; and I affure you · he had the impudence to refuse my offer: by which means I loft a good living, that ' was afterwards given away in exchange for 'a pointer, to one who—but I will not fay any thing against the cloth. So you ' may guess, Mr Adams, what you are to ' expect; for if fermons would have gone down, I believe—I will not be vain: but, ' to be concife with you, three bishops faid, they were the best that ever were writ: but ' indeed there are a pretty moderate number · printed already, and not all fold yet.'---· Pray, Sir,' faid Adams, what do you think ' the numbers may amount to?' ' Sir,' anfwered Barnabas, ' a bookfeller told me he

bel Five

· I w · fer · ha

he Barr tal ma

· lot · an · ar

ar as m

to the

be la

the h

v v

, !

JOSEPH ANDREWS. 125

ams:

ody

Mr

rint

had

ps;

red

ried

011,

ifed

At

ing

hat

his

UO

: T

rat

for

ot

ou

to

ne

ıt,

d,

ut

er

k

- [

believed five thousand volumes at least. ' Five thousand!' quoth the surgeon, ' what can they be writ upon? I remember when ' I was a boy, I used to read one Tillotson's fermons: and I am fure, if a man practifed half fo much as is in one of those fermons, ' he will go to heaven.' ' Doctor,' cried Barnabas, 'you have a profane way of talking, for which I must reprove you. A ' man can never have his duty too frequent-'ly inculcated into him. And as for Til-'lotfon, to be fure he was a good writer, and faid things very well; but comparisons ' are odious; another man may write as well ' as he—I believe there are some of my fer-' mons,'----and then he applied the candle to the pipe. --- 'And I believe there are ' fome of my difcourfes,' cries Adams, which the bishops would not think totally ' unworthy of being printed; and I have been informed, I might procure a very ' large fum (indeed an immense one) on 'them.' 'I doubt that,' answered Barnabas: ' however, if you defire to make fome money of them, perhaps you may fell them by ad-' vertifing the manuscript-sermons of a cler-' gyman lately deceafed, all warranted ori-' ginals, and never printed. And now I ' think of it, I should be obliged to you, if ' there be ever a funeral one among them,

L 3

' to lend it me: for I am this very day to · preach a funeral fermon; for which I have onot penned a line, tho' I am to have a ' double price.' Adams answered, He had but one, which he feared would not ferve his purpose, being facred to the memory of a magistrate, who had exerted himself very fingularly in the prefervation of the morality of his neighbours, infomuch that he had neither ale-house nor lewd woman in the parish where he lived-- 'No,' replied Barnabas, ' that will not do quite fo well; for the deceased upon whose virtues I am to ' harangue, was a little too much addicted to · liquor and publicly kept a mistress ------- I · believe I must take a common fermon, and trust to my memory to introduce something handsome on him.'--- To your in-' vention rather,' faid the doctor, ' your ' memory will be apter to put you out: for ' no man living remembers any thing good

With fuch kind of spiritual discourse, they emptied the bowl of punch, paid their reckoning, and separated: Adams and the doctor went up to Joseph, Parson Barnabas departed to celebrate the aforesaid deceased, and the exciseman descended into the cellar to gauge the vessels.

Joseph was now ready to fit down to a loin

of med ted to be deed debt noth feap his unto rival

lowi noth prog celle almo little to le be al favor

he conthe Barramons

dela

for to d to

the

meinour for ood

and

hey recloc-

ibas fed, Ilar

oin

of mutton, and waited for Mr Adams, when he and the doctor came in. The doctor having felt his pulse, and examined his wounds, declared him much better, which he imputed to that fanative soporiferous draught; a medicine, whose virtues, he faid, were never to be sufficiently extolled. And great, indeed, they must be, if Joseph was so much indebted to them as the doctor imagined; since nothing more than those effluvia, which escaped the cork, could have contributed to his recovery: for the medicine had stood untouched in the window ever since its arrival.

Joseph passed that day and the three sollowing, with his friend Adams; in which nothing so remarkable happened as the swift progress of his recovery. As he had an excellent habit of body, his wounds were now almost healed; and his bruises gave him so little uneasiness, that he pressed Mr Adams to let him depart, told him he should never be able to return sufficient thanks for all his favours; but begged that he might no longer delay his journey to London.

Adams, notwithstanding the ignorance, as he conceived it, of Mr Tow-wouse, and the envy (for such he thought it) of Mr Barnabas, had great expectations from his fermons: feeing therefore Joseph in so good a

way, he told him he would agree to his fetting out the next morning in the stage-coach; that he believed he should have sufficient, after the reckoning paid, to procure him one day's conveyance in it, and afterwards he would be able to set on foot, or might be favoured with a lift in some neighbour's waggon, especially as there was then to be a fair in the town whither the coach would carry him, to which numbers from his parish resorted.---And as to himself, he agreed to proceed to the great city.

They were now walking in the inn-yard, when a fat, fair, short person rode in, and alighting from his horse, went directly up to Barnabas, who was smoaking his pipe on a bench. The parson and the stranger shook one another very lovingly by the hand, and went into a room together.

The evening now coming on, Joseph retired to his chamber, whither the good Adams accompanied him; and took this opportunity to expatiate on the great mercies Goodhad lately shewn him, of which he ought not only to have the deepest inward sense, but likewise to express outward thankfulness for them. They therefore fell both on their knees, and spent a considerable time in prayer and thankfgiving.

They had just finished, when Betty came

to specification in an to specification in a specif

A plantan and who Tookin

frangand whis fee faluti that I nothing had in was I youn misforwas in the state of the state of

turns

in and told Mr Adams, Mr Barnabas defired to speak to him on some business of consequence below stairs. Joseph desired, if it was likely to detain him long, he would let him know it, that he might go to bed, which Adams promised, and in that case they wished one another a good night.

fet.

ach:

ient,

one

s he

it be

our's

o be

arith

d to

ard,

and

p to

on a hook

and

re-

lams

rtu-

Gon

not

but

for

heir

ray-

ame

C H A P. XVII.

A pleasant discourse between the two parsons and the bookseller, which was broke off by an unlucky accident happening in the inn, which produced a dialogue between Mrs Tow-wouse and her maid, of no gentle kind.

A S foon as Adams came into the room, Mr Barnabas introduced him to the firanger, who was, he told him, a bookfeller, and would be as likely to deal with him for his fermons as any man whatever. Adams, faluting the stranger, answered Barnabas, that he was very much obliged to him; that nothing could be more convenient; for he had no other business to the great city, and was heartily desirous of returning with the young man who was just recovered of his misfortune. He then snapt his singers (as was usual with him), and took two or three turns about the room in an ecstasy.---And to

induce the bookfeller to be as expeditious as possible, as likewise to offer him a better price for his commodity, he assured him their meeting was extremely lucky to himself: for that he had the most pressing occasion for money at that time, his own being almost spent, and having a friend then in the same inn who was just recovered from some wounds he had received from robbers, and was in a most indigent condition: 'So that nothing,' says he, 'could be so opportune, for the sup'plying both our necessities, as my making an immediate bargain with you.'

'plying both our necessities, as my making an immediate bargain with you.'

As soon as he had seated himself, the stranger began in these words; 'Sir, I do 'not care absolutely to deny engaging in what my friend Mr Barnabas recommends: but sermons are mere drugs. The trade is 'so vastly stocked with them, that really unless they come out with the name of White-field or Wesley, or some other such great man, as a bishop, or those fort of people, I don't care to touch, unless now it was a 'sermon preached on the 30th of January,

or we could say in the title page, Published at the earnest request of the congregation, or the inhabitants: but truly for a dry piece

of fermons, I had rather be excused; especially, as my hands are so full at present.

However, Sir, as Mr Barnabas mentioned

the ma

This than to, a have a disanfw them feller

reffinger

for W. got diff

· by

gui

them to me, I will, if you please, take the manuscript with me to town, and send you my opinion of it in a very short time.

ous as

price

their

f: for

n for

imolt

fame

ounds

s in a hing,

e fup-

aking

f, the

I do

no in

ends:

y un-Thite-

great

ple, I

was a

uary,

ned at

on, or piece

efpe-

esent.

ioned

'O,' faid Adams, 'if you defire it, I will 'read two or three discourses as a specimen.' This Barnabas, who loved sermons no better than a grocer doth sigs, immediately objected to, and advised Adams to let the bookseller have his sermons; telling him, if he gave him a direction, he might be certain of a speedy answer: adding, he need not scruple trusting them in his possession. 'No,' faid the booksellers' if it was a play that had been acted 'twenty nights together, I believe it would 'be safe.'

Adams did not at all relish the last expression; he said, he was forry to hear fermons compared to plays. 'Not by me, I 'assure you,' cry'd the bookseller, 'though 'I don't know whether the Licensing Act may 'not shortly bring them to the same footing: but I have formerly known a hundred 'guineas given for a play—.' 'More shame 'for those who gave it,' cry'd Barnabas. 'Why so?' said the bookseller, 'for they 'got hundreds by it.' 'But is there no 'difference between conveying good or ill 'instructions to mankind?' said Adams; 'would not an honest mind rather lose money 'by the one, than gain it by the other?'

If you can find any fuch, I will not be · their hindrance,' answered the bookseller: but I think those persons who get by preaching fermons, are the properest to lose by ' printing them: for my part, the copy that

· fie

* th

' as

· fe

" fp

t no

of

ec.

' an

' th

' th

, M.

· bu

er er

1 te

· W

· fu

01

1 00

F

' to

' in

* al

46 V

" V

" a

* €

" 1

· fells best, will be always the best copy in my opinion; I am no enemy to fermons, but

because they don't fell; for I would as foon

' print one of Whitefield's as any farce whatever. . Whoever prints fuch heterodox fluff ought to be hang'd,' fays Barnabas. 'Sir,' faid he, turning to Adams, 'this fellow's " writings (I know not whether you have · feen them) are levelled at the clergy. . would reduce us to the example of the pri-· mitive ages, forfooth! and would infinuate ' to the people that a clergyman ought to be · always preaching and praying. He pre-' tends to understand the scripture literally, and would make mankind believe, that the · poverty and low estate which was recom-" mended to the church in its infancy, and ' was only a temporary doctrine adapted to her ' under persecution, was to be preserved in her flourishing and established state. Sir, ' the principles of Toland, Woolaston, and ' all the free-thinkers, are not calculated to do half the mischief, as those professed by

this fellow and his followers.'

ot be leller; eachofe by y that n my , but sfoon whatfluff Sir, low's have He prito be preally, t the comand oher d in Sir. and

d to

1 by

' Sir,' answered Adams, ' if Mr Whitefield had carried this doctrine no farther than you mention, I should have remained, ' as I once was, his well-wither. I am myfelf as great an enemy to the luxury and ' splendor of the clergy as he can be. I do on not, more than he, by the flourishing estate of the church, understand the palaces, ' equipages, drefs, furniture, rich dainties, and valt fortunes of her ministers. Surely those things, which favour so strongly of this world, become not the fervants of one who professed his kingdom was not of it: 'but when he began to call nonfense and enthusiasin to his aid, and set up the detellable doctrine of faith against good works, I was his friend no longer; for ' furely that doctrine was coined in hell, and one would think none but the devil himself ' could have the confidence to preach it. ' For can any thing be more derogatory to the honour of God, than for men to ' imagine that the all-wife being will here-' after fay to the good and virtuous, " Not-" withstanding the purity of thy life, not-" withstanding that constant rule of virtue " and goodness in which you walked upon " earth, still, as thou didst not believe every " thing in the true orthodox manner, thy " want of faith shall condemn thee?" Or, VOL. I. M

on the other fide, can any doctrine have a " more pernicious influence on fociety, than a persuasion, that it will be a good plea for " the villain at the last day; " LORD, it is " true I never obeyed one of thy commands; " yet punish me not, for I believe them all?" ' I suppose, Sir,' faid the bookseller, ' your ' fermons are of a different kind!' ' Ay, ' Sir,' faid Adams, ' the contrary, I thank · Heaven, is inculcated in almost every page, or I should belye my own opinion, which ' hath always been, that a virtuous and ' good Turk, or heathen, are more acceptable in the fight of their Creator, than a vicious and wicked Christian, though his * faith was as perfectly orthodox as St Paul's himfelf.'- 'I with you fuccess,' says the bookfeller, ' but must beg to be excused, as ' my hands are so very full at present; and ' indeed I am afraid you will find a backwardness in the trade to engage in a book which the clergy would be certain to cry down.' Gop forbid,' fays Adams, ' any books should be propagated which the ' clergy would cry down: but if you mean by the clergy, some few defigning factious ' men, who have it at heart to establish some * favourite schemes at the price of the liberty of mankind, and the very effence of religion, it is not in the power of fuch persons

to cx

a of

ca fli

w w

' in

! on

· fr

Bar ima he i

that with hear com Ada

his rapportion

vou Inid ave a

than

a for

it is

nds; all?"

your Av.

lank

age,

hich

and

ept-

n a

ul's

the as

and ick-

ook

CIT

any the

ean

ous me

rty

eli.

ns

to decry any book they please; witness that 'excellent book called, " A plain account " of the nature and end of the Sacrament;" ' a book written (if I may venture on the expression) with the pen of an angel, and calculated to restore the true use of Chriflianity, and of that facred inflicution: for what could tend more to the noble purposes of religion, than frequent chearful " meetings among the members of a fociety, in which they should, in the presence of one another, and in the fervice of the Subreme Being, make promifes of being good, friendly, and benevolent to each other? Now this excellent book was attacked by a ' party, but unfuccessfully.' At these words Barnabas fell a ringing with all the violence imaginable; upon which a fervant attending, he bid him bring a bill immediately: for that he was in company, for aught he knew, with the devil himself; and he expected to hear the Alcoran, the Leviathan, or Woolston commended, if he staid a few minutes longer. Adams defired, as he was fo much moved at his mentioning a book, which he did without apprehending any possibility of offence, that he would be so kind to propose any objections he had to it, which he would enderyour to answer. 'I propose objections?' faid Barnabas, 'I never read a syllable in.

M 2

any fuch wicked book; I never faw it in my · life, Il affure you.' -- Adams was going to an fwer, when a most hideous uproar began in the inn, Mrs Tow-wouse, Mr Tow-wouse and Betty, all lifting up their voices together : but Mrs Tow-wouse's voice, like a base viol in a concert, was clearly and diffinelly diffinguithed among the rest, and washeard to articulate the following founds, -- O you damn'd ' villain, is this the return to all the care I have taken of your family? this the reward of my virtue? Is this the manner in which ' you behave to one who brought you a ' fortune, and preferred you to fo many ' matches, all your betters? To abuse my bed, my own bed, with my own fervant: but I'll maul the flut, I'll tear her nafty ' eyes out; was ever fuch a pitiful dog, to take up with fuch a mean trollop? If the ' had been a gentlewoman like myfelf, it had been fome excuse; but a beggarly faucy dirty fervant maid.----Get you out of my ' house, you whore.' To which she added another name, which we do not care to flain our paper with. It was a monofyllable beginning with a b-, and indeed was the fame, as if the had pronounced the words, She-Dog. Which term we shall, to avoid offence, use on this occasion, though, indeed, both the miltress and maid uttered the abovementioned

of th thert lame her t as · dos ·Ia ter! tha · my · me woul · me and 1 odiou nar " wie oth ' tha you ' be · lan felf exect

who

a wr

as or

and.

b-, a word extremely difgufful to females of the lower fort Betty had borne all hitherto with patience, and had uttered only lamentations: but the last appellation stung. her to the quick. I am a woman as well 'as yourfelf,' she roared out, 'and no shedog; and if I have been a little naughty, I am not the first; if I have been no better than I should be,' cries she sobbing, ' that's no reason you should call me out of 'my name; my be--betters are wo--rse than 'me.' 'Huzzy, huzzy,' fays Mrs Towwouse, ' have you the impudence to answer "me? Did I not catch you, you faucy ----' and then again repeated the terrible word for odious to female ears. I can't bear that 'name,' answered Betty: 'if I have been ' wicked, I am to answer for it myself in the other world; but I have done nothing 'that's unnatural; and I will go out of ' your house this moment: for I will never ' be called She-Dog by any mittress in Eng-'land.' Mrs Tow-woule then armed herfelf with the fpit; but was prevented from executing any dreadful purpose by Mr Adams, .. who confined her arms with the strength of a wrist which Hercules would not have been. athamed of. Mr Tow-would being caught, as our lawyers express it, with the manner, and having no defence to make, very prus

M.3

an in a and in a but in a angui-

n my

mn'd are I ward hich

my ant:
nafty
g, to
she

nany

had aucy f my Ided Hain

beime, log. ule

the

nel

dently withdrew himself; and Betty committed herself to the protection of the hostler, who, though she could not conceive him pleased with what had happened, was, in her opinion, rather a gentler beast than her mistress.

we

fitt

15

all

of

are

tog

rel

ers

kif

we

arı

no

tio

we

die

qu

ge

of

ter

eff

to

SI

10

Mrs Tow-wouse, at the intercession of Mr Adams, and finding the enemy vanished, began to compose herself, and at length recovered the usual serenity of her temper, in which we will leave her, to open to the reader the steps which led to a catastrophe common enough, and comical enough too, perhaps in modern history, yet often satal to the repose and well-being of samilies, and the subject of many tragedies, both in life and on the stage.

C H A P. XVIII.

The history of Betty the chambermaid, and an account of what occasioned the violent seene in the preceding chapter.

BETTY, who was the occasion of all this hurry, had some good qualities. She had good-nature, generosity and compassion; but unfortunately her constitution was composed of those warm ingredients, which, though the purity of courts or nunneries might have happily controuled them,

m-

ler,

iim

her

of

ed,

re-

in

a-

n-

T-

to

id.

fe-

d

it.

-

n

3

were by no means able to endure the ticklish fituation of a chambermaid at an inn, who is daily liable to the folicitations of lovers of all complexions, to the dangerous addresses of fine gentlemen of the army, who sometimes are obliged to reside with them a whole year together; and above all are exposed to the carelles of footmen, stage-coachmen, and drawers; all of whom employ the whole artillery of kissing, flattering, bribing, and every other weapon which is to be found in the whole armoury of love, against them.

Betty, who was but one and twenty, had now lived three years in this dangerous fituation, during which she had escaped pretty well. An ensign of foot was the first person who made an impression on her heart; he did indeed raise a flame in her, which re-

quired the care of a furgeon to cool.

Whilst she burnt for him, several others burnt for her. Officers of the army, young gentlemen travelling the western circuit, inossensive squires, and some of graver charac-

ter were fet afire by her charms!

At length, having perfectly recovered the effects of her first unhappy passion, she seemed to have vowed a state of perpetual chastity. She was long deaf to all the sufferings of her lovers, till one day, at a neighbouring fair, the rhetoric of John the hostler, with a new

straw hat, and a pint of wine, made a second

conquest over her.

She did not, however, feel any of these flames on this occasion, which had been the consequence of the former amour; nor indeed those other ill effects, which prudent young women very justly apprehend from too absolute an indulgence to the pressing endearments of their lovers. This latter, perhaps, was a little owing to her not being entirely constant to John, with whom she permitted Tom Whipwell the stage-coachman, and now and then a handsome young traveller to share her favours.

Mr Tow-wouse had for some time cast the languishing eyes of affection on this young maiden. He had laid hold on every opportunity of saying tender things to her, squeezing her by the hand, and sometimes kissing her lips: for as the violence of his passion had considerably abated to Mrs Tow-wouse; so, like water, which is stopt from its usual current in one place, it naturally sought a vent in another. Mrs Tow-wouse is thought to have perceived this abatement, and probably it added very little to the natural sweetness of her temper; for though she was as true to her husband as the dial to the sun, she was rather more desirous of being shone

on, wai

ceive difc bett whee fion mass that nuating-enge ture

Jofer tion, her is and I

He flity is hath ways himfe man,

Bet this d

JOSEPH ANDREWS. 1.

on, as being more capable of feeling his warmth.

ond

hefe the

in-

lent

rom

ling

ter,

eing

The

ich-

ung

the

ung

or-

eez-

fing Tion

use :

fual

ht a

ght

oro-

ural

was

one

Ever fince Joseph's arrival, Betty had conceived an extraordinary liking to him, which discovered itself more and more, as he grew better and better; till that fatal evening when, as she was warming his bed, her pathson grew to such a height, and so perfectly mastered both her modesty and her reason, that after so many fruitless hints and sly insinuations, she at last threw down the warming-pan, and embracing him with great eagerness, swore he was the handsomest creature she had ever seen.

Joseph in great confusion leapt from her, and told her, he was forry to see a young woman cast off all regard to modesty: but she had gone too far to recede, and grew so very indecent, that Joseph was obliged, contrary to his inclination, to use some violence to her, and taking her in his arms, he shut her out of the room, and locked the door.

How ought man to rejoice, that his chaflity is always in his own power; that if he hath fufficient strength of mind, he hath always a competent strength of body to defend himself, and cannot, like a poor weak woman, be ravished against his will!

Betty was in the most violent agitation at this disappointment. Rage and lust pulled

her heart, as with two ftrings, two different ways; one moment she thought of stabbing Joseph, the next of taking him in her arm; and devouring him with kiffes; but the latter paffion was far more prevalent. Then she thought of revenging his refufal, on herfelf: but whill the was engaged in this meditation, happily Death presented himself to her in so many thapes of drowning, hanging, poisoning, &c. that her diffracted mind could refolve on none. In this perturbation of spirit, it accidentally occurred to her memory, that her master's bed was not made; the therefore went directly to his room; where he happened at that time to be engaged at his bureau. As foon as the faw him, the attempted to retire. but he called her back, and taking her by the hand, fqueezed her so tenderly, at the fame time whifpered fo many foft things into her ears, and then pressed her so closely with his kiffes, that the vanquished fair one, whose passions were already raised, and which were not fo whimfically capricious that one man only could lay them, though, perhaps, she would have rather preferred that one: the vanquished fair-one quietly submitted, I fay, to her master's will, who had just attained the accomplishment of his blifs, when Mrs Tow-wouse unexpectedly entered the room, and caused all that confusion which

ws he ceffa of: hint or exmay the ceffa of wife with any his ceffa of mine.

nanc

due

JOSEPH ANDREWS. 143

ws have before feen, and which it is not neceffary at prefent to take any farther notice of: fince, without the affiltance of a fingle hint from us, every reader of any speculation, or experience, though not married himfelf, may eafily conjecture, that it concluded with the discharge of Betty, the submission of Mr Tow-wouse, with some things to be performed on his fide by way of gratitude for his wife's goodness in being reconciled to him, with many hearty premifes never to offend any more in the like manner; and lastly, his quietly and contentedly bearing to be reminded of his transgressions, as a kind of penance, once or twice a-day, during the refidue of his life.

ent ing ins,

the but ap-

ne.

diat

As re.

by the

ith

ere

ian she

ie: i, I at-

en the

ch

BOOK SECOND.

C H A P. I.

Of divisions in authors.

HERE are certain mysteries or secrets in all trades, from the highest to the lowest, from that of prime-ministering to this of authoring, which are feldom discovered, unless to members of the same calling. Among those used by us gentlemen of the latter occupation, I take this of dividing our works into books and chapters to be none of the least considerable. Now, for want of being truly acquainted with this fecret, common readers imagine, that by this art of dividing, we mean only to fwell our works to a much larger bulk than they would otherwife be extended to. Thefe feveral places therefore in our paper, which are filled with our books and chapters, are understood as so much buckram, stays, and stay-tape, in a tailor's bill, ferving only to make up the fum total, commonly found at the bottom of our first page, and of his last.

But in reality the case is otherwise; and in this, as well as all other instances, we con-

.

to little look he refreshe trave a da place garen neys him.

the 1

conf

com

Lvift

vise fast:

full

the f ture, and i out a opening and f Sector ev

over meta_I Vo

fult the advantage of our reader, not our own: and indeed many notable uses arise to him from this method: for, first, those little spaces between our chapters may be looked upon as an inn or resting-place, where he may Itop and take a glass, or any other refreshment, as it pleases him. Nay, our fine readers will, perhaps, be scarce able to travel farther than through one of them in a day. As to those vacant pages which are placed between our books, they are to be regarded as those stages, where, in long journeys, the traveller stays some time to repose himself, and consider of what he hath seen in the parts he hath already past through; a confideration which I take the liberty to recommend a little to the reader: for, however frift his capacity may be, I would not advife him to travel through these pages too fast: for if he doth, he may probably mis the feeing fome curious productions of nature, which will be observed by the flower and more accurate reader. A volume without any fuch places of rest resembles the openings of wilds or feas, which tires the eye, and fatigues the spirits when entered upon.

Secondly, what are the contents prefixed to every chapter, but so many inscriptions over the gates of inns (to continue the same metaphor) informing the reader what enter-

Vol. I. N

the this red,

our
ie of
t of
omf di-

lat-

heraces with

as fo in a fum our

and con-

tainment he is to expect, which, if he likes not, he may travel on to the next: for, in biography, as we are not tied down to an exact concatenation equally with other historians; for a chapter or two (for instance this I am now writing) may be often passed over without any injury to the whole. And in these inscriptions I have been as faithful as possible, not imitating the celebrated Montaigne, who promises you one thing and gives you another; nor some title-page authors, who promise a great deal, and produce nothing at all.

There are, besides these more obvious benefits, several others which our readers enjoy from this art of dividing; though perhaps most of them too mysterious to be presently understood by any who are not initiated into the science of authoring. To mention therefore but one which is most obvious, it prevents spoiling the beauty of a book by turning down its leaves, a method otherwise necessary to those readers, who (though they read with great improvement and advantage) are apt, when they return to their study, after half an hour's absence, to forget where

These divisions have the fanction of great antiquity. Homer not only divided his great work into twenty-four books, (in compliment perliber to fi dividual learn give ner,

book that prete the C went being he p Rom

wou V

matt who cernifor en perhaps to the twenty-four letters, to which he had very particular obligations) but, according to the opinion of fome very fagacious critics, hawked them all feparately, delivering only one book at a time, (probably by subscription.) He was the first inventor of the art which hath fo long lain dormant, of publishing by numbers; an art now brought to fuch perfection, that even dictionaries are divided and exhibited piece-meal to the public; nay, one bookfeller hath (to encourage learning, and eafe the public) contrived to give them a dictionary in this divided manner, for only fifteen shillings more than it would have cost entire.

ces

m

an

0-

his

er

112

as

n-

nd

111-

0-

e-

n-

er-

re-

12-

m-

us,

by

ife

lev

ge)

af-

ere

eat

eat

ent

Virgil hath given us his poem in twelve books, an argument of his modefty; for by that doubtless he would infinuate, that he pretends to no more than half the merit of the Greek: for the fame reason, our Milton went originally no farther than ten; 'till being puffed up by the praise of his friends, he put himself on the same footing with the Roman poet.

I shall not however enter fo deep into this matter as fome very learned critics have done, who have with infinite labour and acute difcernment discovered what books are proper for embellishment, and what required simplicity only, particularly with regard to fimilies,

N 2

which I think are now generally agreed to

become any book but the first.

I will difmiss this chapter with the sollowing observation: that it becomes an author generally to divide a book, as it does a butcher to joint his meat; for such assistance is of great help to both the reader and the carver. And now having indulged myself a little, I will endeavour to indulge the curiosity of my reader, who is no doubt impatient to know what he will find in the subsequent chapters of this book.

C H A P. II.

A surprizing instance of Mr Adams's short memory, with the unfortunate consequences which it brought on Joseph.

R Adams and Joseph were now ready to depart different ways, when an accident determined the former to return with his friend, which Tow-wouse, Barnabas, and the bookseller, had not been able to do. This accident was, that those sermous, which the parson was travelling to London to publish there, O my good reader, left behind; what he had mistaken for them in the saddle-bags being no other than three shirts, a pair of shoes, and some other necessaries, which Mrs Adams, who thought her hus-

ba or th

far fer for the no

cui a

tak ma Tof

for the

Up

mused he whim

the

JOSEPH ANDREWS. 149

band would want shirts more than sermons on his journey, had carefully provided him.

This discovery was now luckily owing to the presence of Joseph at the opening the faddle-bags; who having heard his friend fay, he carried with him nine volumes of fermons, and not being of that feet of philosophers, who can reduce all the matter of the world into a nut-shell, feeing there was no room for them in the bags, where the parson had faid they were deposited, had the curiofity to cry out, ' Bless me, Sir, where ' are your fermons?' The parson answered, 'There, there, child, there they are under ' my shirts.' Now it happened that he had taken forth his last shirt, and the vehicle remained vifibly empty. 'Sure, Sir,' fays Joseph, 'there is nothing in the bags.' Upon which Adams starting, and testifying fome furprife, cried, ' Hey! fy, fy upon it, ' they are not here fure enough. Ay, they are certainly left behind.

Joseph was greatly concerned at the uneasiness which he apprehended his friend must feel from this disappointment: he begged him to pursue his journey, and promised he would himself return with the books to him, with the utmost expedition. 'No, 'thank you, child,' answered Adams, 'it 'shall not be so. What would it avail me

N 3

to

folaues a ince

the lf a cu-

ipafub-

hort ences

eady acwith and do.

puind; fadts, a

aries,

to tarry in the great city, unless I had my discourses with me, which are ut ita dicam

the fole cause, the aitia monotate of my

' peregrination. No, child, as this accident

hath happened, I am refolved to return

back to my cure, together with you; which
indeed my inclination fufficiently leads me

to. This disappointment may perhaps be

intended for my good.' He concluded with a verse out of Theocritus which signifies no more than, that sometimes it rains, and some-

times the fun shines.

Joseph bowed with obedience and thankfulness for the inclination which the parson expressed of returning with him; and now the bill was called for, which, on examination, amounted within a shilling to the sum Mr Adams had in his pocket. Perhaps the reader may wonder how he was able to produce a fufficient fum for fo many days; that he may not be furprifed therefore, it cannot be unnecessary to acquaint him, that he had borrowed a guinea of a fervant belonging to the coach and fix, who had been formerly one of his parishioners, and whose master, the owner of the coach, then lived within three miles of him; for fo good was the credit of Mr Adams, that even Mr Peter the Lady Booby's steward would have lent him a guinea with very little fecurity.

an by the vel the per too the the thi oth mo his pla tra anc

fuff mer day mer a pi ferje We kick

as 1

the

ving

my

am

my

ent

irn

ich

me

be

no

ne-

nk-

(on

ow

na-

um the

ro-

hat

iot

ad

to

er,

nin

he

im

Mr Adams discharged the bill, and they were both fetting out, having agreed to ride and ty; a method of travelling much used by persons who have but one horse between them, and is thus performed. The two travellers fet out together, one on horseback, the other on foot; now, as it generally happens that he on horieback outgoes him on toot, the cultom is, that when he arrives at the distance agreed on, he is to dismount, ty the horse to some gate, tree, post, or other thing, and then proceed on foot; when the other comes up to the horse, he unties him, mounts and gallops on, 'till having passed by his fellow-traveller, he likewise arrives at the place of tying. And this is that method of travelling fo much in use among our prudent ancestors, who knew that horses had mouths as well as legs, and that they could not use the latter, without being at the expence of fuffering the beafts themselves to use the former. This was the method in use in those days, when instead of a coach and fix, a member of parliament's lady used to mount a pillion behind her husband; and a grave ferjeant at law condescended to amble to Westminster on an easy pad, with his clerk kicking his heels behind him.

Adams was now gone some minutes, having infisted on Joseph's beginning the jour-

ney on horseback, and Joseph had his foot in the stirrup, when the hostler presented him a bill for the horse's board during his residence at the inn. Joseph said Mr Adams had paid all; but this matter being referred to Mr Tow-wouse, was by him decided in favour of the hostler, and indeed with truth and justice; for this was a fresh instance of that shortness of memory which did not arise from want of parts, but that continual hurry in which parson Adams was always involved.

Joseph was now reduced to a dilemma which extremely puzzled him. due for horse meat was twelve shillings, (for Adams, who had borrowed the beaft of his clerk, had ordered him to be fed as well as they could feed him), and the cash in his pocket amounted to fixpence, (for Adams had divided the last shilling with him.) Now though there have been fome ingenious perfons who have contrived to pay twelve thillings with fixpence, Joseph was not one of them. He had never contracted a debt in his life, and was confequently the lefs ready at an expedient to extricate himself. Towwouse was willing to give him credit till next time, to which Mrs Tow-woule would probably have confented (for fuch was Joseph's beauty, that it had made fome impression

even won Tofe likel hone kets, which eauf coul pock valu wou the 1 coun faid ' the car 'kn

as

· No

to to

wi wi

· W

' mi

of had

foc

bei

foot

nted his

lams

rred

d in

ruth

ce of

not

nual

Nars

nma

fum

(for

his

11 35

ams

Vow

perfhil-

e of

t in

eady

OW-

next pro-

ph's

fion

153

even on that piece of flint which that good woman wore in her bosom by way of heart.) Joseph would have found therefore, very likely, the passage free, had he not, when he honeftly discovered the nakedness of his pockets, pulled out that little piece of gold which we have mentioned before. This eaused Mrs Tow-wouse's eyes to water; she told Joseph, she did not conceive a man could want money whilft he had gold in his pocket. Joseph answered, he had such a value for that little piece of gold, that he would not part with it for a hundred times the riches which the greatest esquire in the county was worth. 'A pretty way indeed,' faid Mrs Tow-wouse, ' to run in debt, and ' then refuse to part with your money, be-' cause you have a value for it. I never ' knew any piece of gold of more value than ' as many shillings as it would change for.' ' Not to preferve my life from starving, nor to redeem it from a robber, would I part ' with this dear piece,' answered Joseph. "What,' fays Mrs Tow-wouse, ' I suppose ' it was given you by fome vile trollop, fome ' miss or other; if it had been the present of a virtuous woman, you would not have ' had fuch a value for it. My husband is a ' fool if he parts with the horse without being paid for him.' No, no, I can't

part with the horse indeed till I have the money,' cried Tow-wouse. A resolution highly commended by a lawyer then in the yard, who declared Mr Tow-wouse might

justify the detainer.

As we cannot therefore at present get Mr Joseph out of the inn, we shall leave him in it, and carry our reader on after parson Adams, who, his mind being perfectly at ease, fell into a contemplation on a passage in Æschylus, which entertained him for three miles together, without suffering him once to reslect on his fellow-traveller.

At length having spun out his thread, and being now at the summit of a hill, he cast his eyes backwards, and wondered that he could not see any sign of Joseph. As he lest him ready to mount the horse, he could not apprehend any mischief had happened, neither could he suspect that he missed his way, it being so broad and plain: the only reason which presented itself to him, was, that he had met with an acquaintance who had prevailed with him to delay some time in discourse.

He therefore refolved to proceed flowly forwards, not doubting but that he should be thortly overtaken, and soon came to a large water, which filling the whole road, he saw no method of passing unless by wading midd fide, the h capa his fi

Hi grew fear ned t fhort withe ment refree fuch did ware pulle

> house percentight of a nose was fello Ada to g

ed h

through, which he accordingly did up to his middle; but was no fooner got to the other fide, than he perceived, if he had looked over the hedge, he would have found a foot-path capable of conducting him without wetting his fhoes.

the

ion the

ght

Mr

in

A-

ife.

Ef-

les

re-

nd

aft

he

eft

ot

21-

V,

n

ne

id

ſ-

y

d

a

e

g

His furprise at Joseph's not coming up grew now very troublesome: he began to sear he knew not what; and as he determined to move no further, and, if he did not shortly overtake him, to return back, he wished to find a house of public entertainment where he might dry his cloaths, and resresh himself with a pint; but seeing no such, (for no other reason than because he did not cast his eyes a hundred yards forwards), he sat himself down on a stile, and pulled out his Æschylus.

A fellow passing presently by, Adams asked him, if he could direct him to an alchouse. The fellow, who had just left it, and perceived the house and sign to be within sight, thinking he had jeered him, and being of a morose temper, bade him sollow his nose and be d—n'd. Adams told him he was a saucy jackanapes; upon which the fellow turned about angrily; but perceiving Adams clench his sist, he thought proper to go on without taking any surther notice.

A horseman following immediately after,

and being asked the same question, answered, · Friend, there is one within a stone's throw:

· I believe you may fee it before you.' Adams, lifting up his eyes, cried, ' I protest and fo there is; and thanking his informer, proceeded directly to it.

H A P. III.

The opinion of two lawyers concerning the same gentleman, with Mr Adams's enquiry into the religion of his hoft.

TE had just entered the house, had called for his pint, and feated himfelf, when two horsemen came to the door, and fastening their horses to the rails, alighted, They faid there was a violent shower of rain coming on, which they intended to weather there, and went into a little room by themfelves, not perceiving Mr Adams.

One of these immediately asked the other, if he had feen a more comical adventure a great while? Upon which the other faid, he doubted whether by law, the landlord

could justify detaining the horse for his ' corn and hay.' But the former answered,

' Undoubtedly he can; it is an adjudged

case, and I have known it tried.'

Adams, who though he was, as the reader may suspect, a little inclined to forgetsulness,

nev him atel OWI for fied the food

7 fent thai libe und very T

ther

who

paff

belo men beg: terix a fir vent wife

· he 'he th:

· by · he V ered, row; otelt mer,

Same into

califelf. and ited. ther iem-

ther, ire a faid. llord r his ered, dged ader neis, never wanted more than a hint to remind him, over-hearing their discourse, immediately fuggested to himself that this was his own horse, and that he had forgot to pay for him, which, upon enquiry, he was certified of by the gentlemen; who added, that the horse was likely to have more rest than food, unless he was paid for.

The poor parson resolved to return prefently to the inn, though he knew no more than Joseph how to procure his horse his liberty: he was however prevailed on to stay under cover, 'till the shower, which was now

very violent, was over. The three travellers then fat down together over a mug of good beer; when Adams, who had observed a gentleman's house as he passed along the road, enquired to whom it belonged: one of the horsemen had no sooner mentioned the owner's name, than the other began to revile him in the most opprobrious The English language scarce affords terins. a fingle reproachful word which he did not vent on this occasion. He charged him likewife with many particular facts. He faid,---' he no more regarded a field of wheat when ' he was hunting, than he did the highway; ' that he had injured feveral poor farmers, by trampling their corn under his horse's

'heels; and if any of them begged him

VOL. I.

with the utmost submission to refrain, his horse-whip was always ready to do them justice. He said, that he was the greatest tyrant to the neighbours in every other instance, and would not suffer a sarmer to keep a gun, though he might justify it by law; and in his own family so cruel a ma-

. (

. 8

. 0

· k

. b

. 0

· d

· d

r

. a

. p

· p

· u

He

COL

the

fen

tho

afk

bee

· V

fhre

m

· fr

1 01

. 60

L 01

fter, that he never kept a fervant a twelvemonth. In his capacity as a justice,' con-

"month. In his capacity as a justice,' continued he, he behaves so partially, that he commits or acquits just as he is in the

humour, without any regard to truth or

evidence: the devil may carry any one before him for me; I would rather be tried

before fome judges, than be a profecutor

before him; if I had an estate in the neighbourhood, I would sell it for half the value,

frather than live near him.

Adams shook his head, and said, 'he was forry such men were suffered to proceed with impunity, and that riches could set any man above law.' The reviler a little after retiring into the yard, the gentleman who had first mentioned his name to Adams, began to assure him, 'that his companion was a prejudiced person. It is true,' says he, 'perhaps, that he may have sometimes pursued his game over a field of corn, but he hath always made the party ample sa-

tisfaction; that fo far from tyrannizing

JOSEPH ANDREWS.

his

hem

itelt

in-

· to

t by

malve-

on-

the

be-

ried

itor

gh-

lue,

was

eed

fet

ttle

nan

ms,

ion

ays

nes

but

fa-

ing

over his neighbours, or taking away their ' guns, he himself knew several farmers not · qualified, who not only kept guns, but killed game with them. That he was the best of masters to his servants, and several of them had grown old in his fervice. That he was the best justice of peace in the kingdom, and to his certain knowledge had decided many difficult points, which were · referred to him, with the greatest equity, and the highest wisdom. And he verily believed, several persons would give a year's ' purchase more for an estate near him, than ' under the wings of any other great man.' He had just finished his encomium, when his companion returned, and acquainted him the storm was over. Upon which they prefently mounted their horses and departed.

Adams, who was in the utmost anxiety at those different characters of the same person, asked his host if he knew the gentleman: for he began to imagine they had by mistake been speaking of two several gentlemen. 'No, no, master!' answered the host, a shrewd cunning fellow; 'I know the gentleman very well of whom they have been 'speaking, as I do the gentleman who spoke of him. As for riding over other men's corn, to my knowledge he hath not been on horseback these two years. I never

0 2

' heard he did any injury of that kind; and as to making reparation, he is not fo free of his money as that comes to neither. ' Nor did I ever hear of his taking away any ' man's gun; nay, I know feveral that have guns in their houfes; but as for killing game with them, no man is stricter; and I believe he would ruin any who did. You heard one of the gentlemen fay, he was ' the worst master in the world, and the other that he is the best: but for my own ' part, I know all his fervants, and never heard from any of them that he was either one or the other.' -- 'Aye! aye!' fays Adams, ' and how doth he behave as a ju-' stice, pray?' ' Faith, friend,' answered the hoft, ' I question whether he is in the com-· mission: the only cause I have heard he · hath decided a great while, was one between ' those very two persons who just went out of this house; and I am sure he determined ' that juftly, for I heard the whole matter.' Which did he decide it in favour of?" quoth Adams. 'I think I need not answer ' that question,' cried the host, ' after the · different characters you have heard of him. It is not my bufiness to contradict gentle-! men, while they are drinking in my house; but I knew neither of them spoke a syllable of truth,' God forbid!' faid Adams,

the we not not in an in

fig fel fel an

dam
the for

tri
wo

the l dram for f very

JOSEPH ANDREWS. 16r

and

free

her.

any

ave

ling

1 br

You

Was

the

nwo

ever

ther

fays

ju-

the

om-

he

reen

out

ned

ter.'

of?

wer

the

im.

tle-

11e:

able

ms,

that men should arrive at such a pitch of wickedness, to belye the character of their neighbour from a little private affection, or, what is infinitely worse, a private spite. ' I rather believe we have miltaken them, and they mean two other persons: for ' there are many houses on the road.' 'Why "prithee, friend,' cries the hoft, dost thou ' pretend never to have told a lie in thy ' life?' 'Never a malicious one, I am cer-'tain,' answered Adams; 'nor with a de-' fign to injure the reputation of any man 'living.' 'Pugh! malicious; no, no,' replied the hoft; 'not malicious, with a de-' fign to hang a man, or bring him into ' trouble; but furely, out of love to one's felf, one must speak better of a friend than ' an enemy.' ' Out of love to yourfelf! you flould confine yourfelf to truth,' fays Adams, ' for by doing otherwise, you injure the noblest part of yourfelf, your immortal ' foul. I can hardly believe any man fuch 'an ideot to risque the loss of that by any trifling gain, and the greatest gain in this world is but dirt in comparison of what. ' shall be revealed hereafter.' Upon which the hoft, taking up the cup, with a finile, drank a health to Hereafter; adding, he was for fomething prefent. 'Why,' fays Adams very gravely, 'do not you believe another:

0 3

on

fep

· v

. h

· t

6 b

cou

wh

was

was

for Ve

and

nyi

alke

had afk

pily

to a

but he i

whi and

hatl

the

J Acp

world?' To which the host answered, 'Yes, ' he was no Atheist.' ' And you believe ' you have an immortal foul?' cries Adams. He answered, ' God forbid he should not.' And ' heaven and hell?' faid the parson. The host then bid him ' not to profane; for those were things not to be mentioned nor ' thought of but in church.' Adams asked him, 'Why he went to church, if what he · learned there had no influence on his con-' duct in life?' ' I go to church,' answered the hoft, ' to fay my prayers, and behave ' godly ' 'And doft not thou,' cried Adams, believe what thou hearest at church?' · Most part of it, Master,' returned the host. · And dost thou not then tremble,' cries Adams, ' at the thought of eternal punish-' ment?' ' As for that, Master,' said he, ' I · never once thought about it: but what ' fignifies talking about matters fo far off? 'The mug is out, shall I draw another?' Whilst he was going for that purpose, a

ftage coach drove up to the door. The coachman coming into the house, was asked by the mistress, 'what passengers he had in his coach!' A parcel of squinnygut b--s, '(says he) I have a good mind to overturn them; you won't prevail upon them to 'drink any thing, I assure you.' Adams asked him if he had not seen a young man

eve

ms.

ot.'

on.

for

nor

ked

on-

ered

lave

ms,

h ?

oft.

cries

nish-

· I

vhat

off?

e, a

The

fked

id in

)---S,

turn

n to lams

man

163

on horseback on the road, (describing Jofeph): 'Aye, 'faid the coachman, 'a gentlewoman in my coach that is his acquaint-' ance redeemed him and his horse; he would have been here before this time, had not the storm driven him to shelter.' God ' bless her,' said Adams, in a rapture; nor could he delay walking out to fatisfy himself who this charitable woman was; but what was his furprife, when he faw his old acquaintance Madam Slipflop? Her's indeed was not fo great, because she had been informed by Joseph, that he was on the road. Very civil were the falutations on both fides: and Mrs Sliptlop rebuked the hofters for denying the gentleman to be there when she asked for him. But indeed the poor woman had not erred defignedly; for Mrs Slipflop asked for a clergyman; and she had unhappily mistaken Adams for a person travelling to a neighbouring fair with the thimble and button, or some other such operation: for he marched in a fwinging great, but short, white coat with black buttons, a fhort wig, and a hat, which fo far from having a black hatband, had nothing black about it.

Joseph was now come up, and Mrs Slipflep would have had him quit his horse to the parson, and come himself into the coach: but he absolutely refused, saying, he thanked

P64 THE ADVENTURES OF

Heaven he was well enough recovered to be very able to ride; and added, he hoped he knew his duty better than to ride in a coach,

while Mr Adams was on horseback.

Mrs Slipflop would have perfifted longer, had not a lady in the coach put a fhort end to the dispute, by refusing to suffer a fellow in a livery to ride in the same coach with herself: so it was at length agreed that Adams should fill the vacant place in the coach, and Joseph should proceed on horseback.

They had not proceeded far before Mrs Slipflop, addreffing herfelf to the parson, fpoke thus: 'There hath been a strange al-· teration in our family, Mr Adams, fince · Sir Thomas's death.' · A strange alteration indeed!' fays Adams, ' as I gather from fome hints which have dropped from ' Joseph.' ' Aye,' fays she, ' I could never ' have believed it, but the longer one lives in the world, the more one fees. So Jo-" feph hath given you hints.'--- But of what. nature will always remain a perfect fecret with me,' cries the parson; 'he forced me to promise before he would communicate any thing. I am indeed concerned to ' find her ladyship behave in so unbecoming a manner. I always thought her in the main a good lady, and should never have

۴,

.

S

1

fuspected her of thoughts so unworthy a ' Christian, and with a young lad her own fervant.' These things are no secrets to 'me, I affure you,' cries Slipflop; 'and I believe they will be none any where shortly: ' for ever fince the boy's departure, she hath behaved more like a mad-woman than any thing elfe.' Truly, I am heartily concerned, fays Adams, for the was a good fort of a lady; indeed I have often wished he had attended a little more constantly ' at the fervice, but she hath done a great ' deal of good in the parish.' 'O, Mr A-' dams !' fays Slipflop, ' people that don't ' fee all, often know nothing, Many things ' have been given away in our family, I do 'affure you, without her knowledge. ' have heard you fay in the pulpit, we ought ' not to brag: but indeed I can't avoid faying, if she had kept the keys herself, the ' poor would have wanted many a cordial ' which I have let them have. As for my ' late master, he was as worthy a man as ever lived, and would have done infinite good if he had not been controlled: but ' he loved a quiet life, heavens rest his foul! ' I am confident he is there, and enjoys a quiet life, which fome folks would not allow ' him here.' Adams answered, he had never heard this before, and was mistaken if she

herself, (for he remembered she used to commend her mistress and blame her master), had not formerly been of another opinion.

I don't know,' replied she, 'what I might

once think: but now I am confidous mat-

ters are as I tell you: the world will fhortly

fee who hath been deceived; for my part,
I fay nothing but that it is wondersome

how fome people can carry all things with

m

a

Ct

it

in

tr

fe

W

tis

pr

to

H

ey

Wi

ha

a grave face.'

Thus Mr Adams and she discoursed, till they came opposite to a great house which stood at some distance from the road; a lady in the coach spying it, cried, Yonder lives the unfortunate Leonora, if one can justly call a woman unfortunate whom we must own at the same time guilty, and the author of her own calamity. This was abundantly sufficient to awaken the curiosity of Mr Adams, as indeed it did that of the whole company, who jointly solicited the lady to acquaint them with Leonora's history, since it seemed, by what she had said, to contain something remarkable.

The Lady, who was perfectly well bred, did not require many intreaties, and having only wished their entertainment might make amends for the company's attention, she be-

gan in the following manner.

C H A P. IV.

The history of Leonora: or, The unfortunate jilt.

n. it

y

t,

e

h

11

h

y

e

a

n

 \mathbf{f}

y

r

le

0

ce

n

ŀ,

g

ce

EONORA was the daughter of a gentleman of fortune; the was tall and well-shaped, with a sprightlines in her countenance, which often attracts beyond more regular seatures joined with an insipid air; nor is this kind of beauty less apt to deceive than allure; the good-humour which it indicates being often mistaken for good-nature, and the vivacity for true understanding.

Leonora, who was now at the age of eighteen, lived with an aunt of her's in a town in the north of England. She was an extreme lover of gaiety: and very rarely miffed a ball, or any other public affembly; where she had frequent opportunities of fatisfying a greedy appetite of vanity with the preference which was given her by the men to almost every other woman present.

Among many young fellows who were particular in their gallantries towards her, Horatio foon diftinguished himself in her eyes beyond all his competitors; she danced with more than ordinary gaiety when he happened to be her partner; neither the

fairnels of the evening, nor the music of the nightingale, could lengthen her walk like his company. She affected no longer to understand the civilities of others: whilst she inclined so attentive an ear to every compliment of Horatio, that she often smiled, even when it was too delicate for her comprehension.

' Pray, Madam,' fays Adams, ' who was

this Squire Horatio?'

Horatio, fays the Lady, was a young gentleman of a good family, bred to the law, and had been fome few years called to the degree of a barrifter. His face and perfon were such as the generality allowed handfome: but he had a dignity in his air very rarely to be seen. His temper was of the saturnine complexion, and without the least turnine complexion, and without the least taint of moroseness. He had wit and humour, with an inclination to satire, which he indulged rather too much.

This gentleman, who had contracted the most violent passion for Leonora, was the last person who perceived the probability of its success. The whole town had made the match for him, before he himself had deawn a considence from her actions sufficient to mention his passion to her: for it was his opinion, (and perhaps he was there in the right), that it is highly impelitic to talk se-

Wa

or

for

cor

· q

ani tl

· de

I

riously of love to a woman before you have made such a progress in her affections, that she herself expects and desires to hear it.

it

1-

as

he

to

re

d-

ry

a-

ait

ır,

ul-

he

the

of

the

WIL

to

his

the

fe-

But whatever diffidence the fears of a lover may create, which are apt to magnify every favour conferred on a rival, and to fee the little advances towards themselves through the other end of the perspective; it was impossible that Horatio's passion should so blind his discernment, as to prevent his conceiving hopes from the behaviour of Leonora, whose sondness for him was now as visible to an indisferent person in their company, as his for her.

'I never knew any of these forward sluts' come to good,' says the Lady who resused Joseph's entrance into the coach, 'nor shall' I wonder at any thing she doth in the 'fequel.'

The Lady proceeded in her story thus: It was in the midst of a gay conversation in the walks one evening, when Horatio whispered Leonora, that he was desirous to take a turn or two with her in private; for that he had something to communicate to her of great consequence. 'Are you sure it is of consequence?' faid she, smiling—'I hope,' answered he, 'you will think so too, since

answered he, 'you will think so too, since the whole future happiness of my life must depend on the event.'

Vol. I. P

Leonora, who very much suspected what was coming, would have deferred it till another time: but Horatio, who had more than half conquered the difficulty of speaking, by the first motion, was so very importunate, that she at last yielded, and leaving the rest of the company, they turned afide into an

unfrequented walk.

They had retired far out of light of the company, both maintaining a first illence. At last Horatio made a full stop, and taking Leonora, who flood pale and trembling, gently by the hand, he fetched a deep figh, and then looking on her eyes with all the tenderness imaginable, he cried out in a faltering accent; 'O Leonora! is it necessary for me to declare to you on what the future happiness of my life must be founded! ' Must I say, there is something belonging to you which is a bar to my happiness, and which unless you will part with, I must be " miserable?" " What can that be?" replied Leonora .--- ' No wonder,' faid he, ' you. are furprifed that I should make an objec-' tion to any thing which is yours; yet fure you may guefs, fince it is the only one ' which the riches of the world, if they were ' mine, should purchase of me---Oh it is that which you must part with, to bestow all the rest! Can Leonora, or rather will she,

al

JOSEPH ANDREWS. 171

doubt longer!----Let me then whisper it in her ear----It is your name, Madam. It is by parting with that, by your condefeension to be for ever mine, which must at once prevent me from being the most miserable, and will render me the happiest of mankind.'

at

in-

an

by

ite,

eit

an

he

ce.

ng

18,

th,

he

al.

iry

fu-

ed!

ng

nd

be

ied

ou.

ec-

ire

me

ere

iat

all

he,

Leonora, covered with blushes, and with as angry a look as she could possibly put on, told him, 'that had she suspected what his 'declaration would have been, he should 'not have decoyed her from her company; 'that he had so surprised and frighted her, that she begged him to convey her back as 'quick as possible;' which he, trembling very near as much as herself, did.

'More fool he,' cried Slipflop, 'it is a 'fign he knew very little of our fect.' Tru'ly, Madam,' faid Adams, 'I think you are
'in the right; I thould have infifted to know 'a piece of her mind, when I had carried 'matters fo far.' But Mrs Grave-airs defired the lady to omit all fuch fulfome stuff in her story; for that it made her fick.

Well, then, Madam, to be as concise as possible, said the lady, many weeks had not passed after this interview, before Horatio and Leonora were what they call on a good footing together. All ceremonies except the last were now over; the writings were now

P 2

drawn, and every thing was in the utmost forwardness preparative to the putting Horatio in possession of all his wishes. I will, if you please, repeat you a letter from each of them, which I have got by heart, and which will give you no small idea of their passion on both sides.

Mrs Grave-airs objected to hearing these letters: but being put to the vote, it was carried against her by all the rest in the coach; parson Adams contending for it with

the utmost vehemence.

HORATIO to LEONORA.

LIOW vain, most adorable creature, is the pursuit of pleasure in the absence " of an object to which the mind is entirely " devoted, unless it have fome relation to " that object! I was last night condemned " to the fociety of men of wit and learning, " which, however agreeable it might have of formerly been to me, now only gave me " a fuspicion that they imputed my absence " in convertation to the true cause. For " which reason, when your engagements " forbid me the extatic happiness of seeing " you, I am always defirous to be alone; " fince my fentiments for Leonora are fo delicate, that I cannot bear the apprehen-" fion of another's prying into those delight-

JOSEPH ANDREWS. 173

oft

10-

ill,

ich

nd

efe

vas

the

ith

is

nce

ely

to

ned

ng,

ave

me

nce

or

nts

ing

1e;

10

en-

ht-

ful endearments with which the warm " imagination of a lover will fometimes in-" dulge him, and which I suspect my eyes " then betray. To fear this discovery of " our thoughts, may perhaps appear too ri-" diculous a nicety to minds not susceptible " of all the tendernesses of this delicate pas-" fion. And furely we shall suspect there are few fuch, when we consider that it re " quires every human virtue, to exert itself " in its full extent. Since the beloved, whose " happiness it ultimately respects, may give " us charming opportunities of being brave " in her defence, generous to her wants, " compassionate to her afflictions, grateful " to her kindness; and, in the same man-" ner, of exercifing every other virtue, which " he who would not do to any degree, and " that with the utmost rapture, can never " deferve the name of a lover: It is there-" fore with a view to the delicate modesty " of your mind that I cultivate it fo purely " in my own; and it is that which will fuf-" ficiently fuggest to you the uneafiness I " bear from those liberties, which men, to " whom the world allow politeness, will " fometimes give themselves on these occa-" fions.

" Can I tell you with what eagerness I expect the arrival of that blessed day, when

P 3

"I shall experience the falsehood of a com"mon assertion, that the greatest human
happiness consists in hope? a doctrine
which no person had ever stronger reason
to believe than myself at present, since
none ever tasted such bliss as sires my bofom with the thoughts of spending my suture days with such a companion, and
that every action of my life will have the
glorious satisfaction of conducing to your
happiness"

LEONORA to HORATIO *.

"HE refinement of your mind has been fo evidently proved by every word and action ever fince I had first the pleasifure of knowing you, that I thought it impossible my good opinion of Horatio could have been heightened to any additional proof of merit. This very thought was my amusement when I received your last letter, which when I opened, I confess I was surprised to find the delicate sentiments expressed there, so far exceeded what I thought could come even from you, (although I knew all the generous principles human nature is capable of, are centered." This letter was written by a younglady on read-

66

65

6:

46

66

66

66

* This letter was written by a young lady, on reading the former.—Most probably, this young lady was Miss Sarah Fielding, sister of the author, and the ingenious writer of the adventures of David Simple, and other estimable pieces.

" in your breast) that words cannot paint
"what I feel on the ressection, that my hap"piness shall be the ultimate end of all your
"actions.

1-

n

ie

n

ce

()-

11-

d

10

UP

n

rd

2-

it.

io

li-

ht

ur

cis

ti-

at

al-

les

cd

ad-

in-

ole,

"Oh Horatio! what a life must that be, "where the meanest domestic cares are sweetened by the pleasing consideration; that the man on earth who best deserves, and to whom you are most inclined to give your affections, is to reap either prosit or pleasure from all you do! in such a case toils must be turned into diversions, and nothing but the unavoidable inconverniencies of life can make us remember that we are mortal.

" If the folitary turn of your thoughts, " and the defire of keeping them undifco-" vered, makes even the conversation of " men of wit and learning tedious to you, " what anxious hours must I spend who am " condemned by custom to the conversation " of women, whose natural curiofity leads " them to pry into all my thoughts, and " whose envy can never suffer Horatio's " heart to be poffeffed by any one without " forcing them into malicious defigns against " the person who is so happy as to possess " it! but indeed, if ever envy can possibly " have any excuse, or even alleviation, it is " in this cafe, where the good is fo great, " and it must be equally natural to all to

" wish it for themselves, nor am I ashamed to own it: and to your merit, Horatio, I am obliged, that prevents my being in that most uneasy of all the situations I can si-

" gure in my imagination, of being led by inclination to love the perfor whom my

own judgment forces me to condemn."

Matters were in fo great forwardness between this fond couple, that the day was fixed for their marriage, and was now within a fortnight, when the sessions chanced to be held for that county in a town about twenty miles distance from that which is the scene of our story. It seems it is usual for the young gentlemen of the bar to repair to these sessions, not so much for the sake of profit, as to shew their parts, and learn the law of the justices of peace: for which purpose one of the wisest and gravest of all the justices is appointed speaker or chairman, as they modestly call it, and he reads them a lecture, and instructs them in the true knowledge of the law.

'You are here guilty of a little mistake,' fays Adams, 'which, if you please I will

correct; I have attended at one of these quarter sessions, where I observed the coun-

as

H

al

ve

· fel taught the justices, instead of learning

any thing of them.'

It is not very material, faid the lady. Hither repaired Horatio, who as he hoped by his profession to advance his fortune, which was not at present very large, for the sake of his dear Leonora, he resolved to spare no pains, nor lose any opportunity of improving

or advancing himself in it.

The same afternoon in which he left the town, as Leonora stood at her window, a coach and six passed by; which she declared to be the compleatest, genteelest, prettiest equipage she ever saw; adding these remarkable words, 'O I am in love with that equi' page!' which though her friend Flarella at that time did not greatly regard, she hath since remembered.

In the evening an affembly was held, which Leonora honoured with their company: but intended to pay her dear Horatio the compliment of refusing to dance in his ab-

fence.

d

I

at fi-

by

14

10.

T 40

111

be

ty

of

17

ns,

eW

ces

felt

ted

it,

icts

re,

Will

iefe

IIII-

ing

Hi-

by

O why have not women as good refolution to maintain their vows, as they have often

good inclinations in making them!

The gentleman who owned the coach and fix came to the assembly. His clothes were as remarkably fine as his equipage could be. He soon attracted the eyes of the company; all the smarts, all the filk waistcoats with filver and gold edgings, were eclipsed in an instant.

' Madam,' faid Adams, ' if it he not im-

' pertinent, I should be glad to know how

' this gentleman was dreffed?'

Sir, answered the lady, I have been told he had on a cut velvet coat of a cinnamon colour, lined with a pink fatten, embroidered all over with gold; his waistcoat, which was cloth of filver, was embroidered with gold likewise. I cannot be particular as to the rest of his dress: but it was all in the French fashion; for Bellarmine (that was his name)

was just arrived from Paris.

This fine figure did not more entirely engage the eyes of every lady in the affembly, than Leonora did his. He had fearce beheld her, but he stood motionless and fixed as a statue, or at least would have done so, if good breeding had permitted him. However, he carried it to far, before he had power to correct himself, that every person in the room eafily discovered where his admiration was fettled. The other ladies began to fingle out their former partners, all perceiving who would be Bellarmine's choice; which they however endeavoured, by all possible means, to prevent: many of them faying to Leonora, 'O Madam, I suppose we shan't have ' the pleafure of feeing you dance to-night;' and then crying out in Bellarmine's hearing, 'O Leonora will not dance, I affure you; her partner is not here.' One maliciously

attempted to prevent her, by fending a difagreeable fellow to ask her, that so the might be obliged either to dance with him, or sit down: but this scheme proved abortive.

n

d

IS

d

ie

h

2)

1-

y,
ld

if

er,

to

m

23

le

10

ey

ıs,

0-

ve

t;

g,

11;

fly

Leonora faw herfelf admired by the fine ftranger, and envied by every woman present. Her little heart began to flutter within her, and her head was agitated with a convulfive motion; the feemed as if the would speak to feveral of her acquaintance, but had nothing to fay: for as the would not mention her present triumph, so she could not disengage her thoughts one moment from the contemplation of it: the had never tafted any thing like this happiness. She had before known what it was to torment a fingle woman; but to be hated and fecretly curfed by a whole affembly, was a joy referved for this bleffed moment. As this vast profusion of ecstacy had confounded her understanding, so there was nothing fo foolish as her behaviour; she played a thousand childish tricks, distorted her person into several shapes, and her face into feveral laughs, without any reason. a word, her carriage was as abfurd as her defires, which were, to affect an infenfibility of the stranger's admiration, and at the same time a triumph, from that admiration, over every woman in the room.

In this temper of mind, Bellarmine having

enquired who she was, advanced to her, and with a low bow begged the honour of dancing with her, which she with as low a curtesy immediately granted. She danced with him all night, and enjoyed perhaps the highest pleasure that she was capable of feeling.

At these words, Adams setched a deep groan, which frighted the ladies, who told him, 'they hoped he was not ill.' He answered, 'he groaned only for the folly of 'Leonora.'

Leonora retired, (continued the Lady) about fix in the morning, but not to reft. She tumbled and toffed in her bed, with very fhort intervals of fleep, and those entirely filled with dreams of the equipage and fine clothes she had seen, and the balls, operas, and ridottos, which had been the subject of their conversation.

In the afternoon, Bellarmine, in the dear coach and fix, came to wait on her. He was indeed charmed with her person, and was, on enquiry, so well pleased with the circumstances of her father, (for he himself, notwithstanding all his sinery, was not quite so rich as Cræsus or an Attalus.) 'Attalus,' says Mr Adams: 'but pray how came you 'acquainted with these names?' The Lady smiled at the question, and proceeded—-He was so pleased, I say, that he resolved to

make his addresses to her directly. He did fo accordingly, and that with so much warmth and briskness, that he quickly bafsled her weak repulses, and obliged the lady to refer him to her father, who, she knew, would quickly declare in favour of a coach and six.

 $^{\mathrm{id}}$

n-

rth

h-

ер

ld n-

of

(y)

eit.

ry

ely

ne

as,

of

ear

vas

as,

m-

ot-

fo

us,

ou

ady

He

to

Thus, what Horatio had by fighs and tears, love and tenderness, been so long obtaining, the French English Bellarmine with gaiety and gallantry possessed himself of in an instant. In other words, what modesty had employed a full year in raising, impudence demolished in twenty-four hours.

Here Adams groaned a fecond time; but the ladies, who began to finoke him, took no notice.

From the opening of the affembly till the end of Bellarmine's vifit, Leonora had fcarce once thought of Horatio; but he now began, though an unwelcome gueft, to enter into her mind. She wished she had feen the charming Bellarmine and his charming equipage, before matters had gone so far. 'Yet 'why,' says she, 'should I wish to have feen him before? or what signifies it that I have seen him now? is not Horatio my lover? almost my husband? is he not as handsome, nay handsomer than Bellarmine? Ay, but Bellarmine is the genteeler

Vol. I. Q

and the finer man; yes, that he must be sallowed. Yes, yes, he is that certainly. · But did not I no longer ago than yesterday · love Horatio more than all the world? ' Ay, but yesterday I had not seen Bellar. ' mine. But doth not Horatio doat on me, and may he not in despair break his heart ' if I abandon him? Well, and hath not Bellarmine a heart to break too? Yes, but ' I promised Horatio first; but that was poor Bellarmine's misfortune; if I had feen him · first, I should certainly have preferred him. ' Did not the dear creature prefer me to every woman in the affembly, when every · She was laying out for him? when was it ' in Horatio's power to give me fuch an inflance of affection? Can he give me an equipage, or any of those things which Bellarmine will make me mistress of? how vast is the difference between being the wife of a poor counfellor, and the wife of one of Bellarmine's fortune? If I marry ' Horatio, I shall triumph over no more than one rival: but by marrying Bellarmine, I fhall be the envy of all my acquaintance. What happiness!—But can I suffer Horatio to die? for he hath fworn he cannot furvive my lofs: but perhaps he may not die; if he should, can I prevent it? must I facrifice myself to him? besides, Bellar-

. 1

· a

· y

JOSEPH ANDREWS. 184

mine may be as miferable for me too." She was thus arguing with herfelf, when fome young ladies called her to the walks, and a little relieved her anxiety for the prefent.

7.

e,

rt

ot

ut

or

m

n.

to

ry

it

n.

an

ch

W

he

of

rry

uri

, I

ce.

to-

not

not

A I

lar-

The next morning Bellarmine breakfasted with her in presence of her aunt, whom he fufficiently informed of his pation for Leonora. He was no fooner withdrawn, than the old lady began to advise her niece on this occasion --- You fee, child,' fays she, ' what fortune hath thrown in your way; ' and I hope you will not withstand your ' own preferment.' Leonora fighing, begged her not to mention any fuch thing, when the knew her engagements to Horatio. ' En-' gagements to a fig,' cried the aunt; ' you ' should thank Heaven on your knees, that ' you have it yet in your power to break ' them. 'Will any woman hefitate a mo-' ment, whether she shall ride in a coach, or ' walk on foot all the days of her life? ----' But Bellarmine drives fix, and Horatio not ' even a pair.' ' Yes, but, Madam, what ' will the world fay?' answered Leonora; ' will not they condemn me?' 'The world ' is always on the fide of prudence,' cries the ' aunt, ' and would furely condemn you, if you facrificed your interest to any motive ' whatever. O I know the world very well;

and you show your ignorance, my dear, by your objection. O' my conscience! the world is wifer. I have lived longer in it than you; and I affure you there is onot any thing worth our regard besides money; nor did I ever know any one per-' fon who married from other confiderations, who did not afterwards heartily repent it. Besides, if we examine the two men, can ' you prefer a fneaking fellow who hath been bred at the university, to a fine gentleman ' just come from his travels?—All the world must allow Bellarmine to be a fine gentle-' man, positively a fine gentleman, and a ' handsome man.' ' Perhaps, Madam, I ' thould not doubt, if I knew how to be ' handsomely off with the other.' 'O leave ' that to me,' fays the aunt. ' You know vour father hath not been acquainted with the affair. Indeed, for my part, I thought ' it might do well enough, not dreaming of ' fuch an offer; but I'll difengage you; ' leave me to give the fellow an answer. I ' warrant you shall have no farther trouble.'

. 1

. 1

. j

· te

· t

6. n

f m

Leonora was at length fatisfied with her aunt's reasoning; and Bellarmine supping with her that evening, it was agreed he should the next morning go to her father and propose the match, which she consented should

be confummated at his return.

JOSEPH ANDREWS. 189

The aunt retired foon after supper, and the lovers being left together, Bellarmine began in the following manner: 'Yes, Madam, this coat I affure you was made at Paris, and I defy the best English tailor even to imitate it. There is not one of them can cut, Madam, they can't cut. If you observe how this skirt is turned, and this sleeve, a clumfy English rascal can do ' nothing like it.—Pray how do you like my 'liveries?' Leonora answered, ' she thought ' them very pretty.' ' All French,' fays he, ' I affure you, except the great coats; I never trust any thing more than a great coat to ' an Englishman; you know one must encourage our own people what one can, 'especially as, before I had a place, I was in the country interest, he, he, he! but for ' myfelf, I would see the dirty island at the bottom of the sea, rather than wear a single ' rag of English work about me; and I am ' fure, after you have made one tour to Paris, you will be of the fame opinion with regard to your own cloaths. You can't conceive. what an addition a French drefs would be: to your beauty; I positively affure you, at the first opera I saw since I came over, I: " mistook the English ladies for chambermaids, he, he, he!'

t.

n

n

d

-

a

I

e

ve

W

h

ht

of

u;

I

e.'

er

ng

ild

-0-

ild

With fuch fort of polite discourse did the

gay Bellarmine entertain his beloved Leonora, when the door opened on a fudden, and Horatio entered the room. Here 'tis impossible to express the surprise of Leonora.

'Poor woman,' fays Mrs Slipflop, 'what a terrible quandary she must be in!' Not at all,' says Miss Grave-airs, 's such sluts' can never be confounded.' 'She must have then more than Corinthian assurance,' faid Adams; 'aye, more than Lais herself.'

A long filence, continued the lady, prevailed in the whole company. If the familiar entrance of Horatio struck the greatest astonishment into Bellarmine, the unexpected presence of Bellarmine no less surprised Horatio. At length Leonora, collecting all the spirit she was mistress of, addressed herself to the latter, and pretended to wonder at the reason of so late a visit. ' I should, indeed,' answered he, ' have made some apology for disturbing you at this hour, had not my finding you in company affured me I do ' not break in upon your repose.' Bellarmine rose from his chair, traversed the room in a minuet step, and humm'd an opera tune, while Horatio, advancing to Leonora, asked her in a whisper, if that gentleman was not a relation of hers; to which she answered with a fmile, or rather fneer, ' No, he is no relation of mine yet;' adding, ' she could

Horatio told her foftly, 'it did not arise 'from jealousy.' 'Jealousy! I assure you, 'it would be very strange in a common acquaintance to give himself any of those 'airs.' These words a little surprized Horatio; but before he had time to answer, Bellarmine danced up to the lady, and told her, 'he seared he interrupted some business 'between her and the gentleman.' 'I can 'have no business,' said she, 'with the gentleman, nor any other, which need be any 'secret to you.'

n,

is

a.

at

oť

ts

e,"

e-

ar

oed

0-

he

to

he d,

or

ny do

ar-

m

ne,

ed

ot

ed

no

ald

' You'll pardon me,' faid Horatio, ' if I defire to know who this gentleman is, who is to be entrusted with all our fecrets.' ' You'll know foon enough,' cries Leonora; but I can't guess what secrets can ever pass ' between us of fuch mighty consequence.' ' No. Madam!' cries Horatio, ' I'm fure ' you would not have me understand you in ' earnest.' 'Tis indifferent to me,' fays she, ' how you understand me; but I think so ' unseasonable a visit is difficult to be under-' stood at all, at least when people find one ' engaged; though one's fervants do not deny one, one may expect a well-bred person ' should soon take the hint.' ' Madam,' faid Horatio, 'I did not imagine any en-' gagement with a stranger, as it seems this

e gentleman is, would have made my visit impertinent, or that any fuch ceremonies were to be preserved between persons in our fituation' Sure you are in a dream,' faid she, ' or would perfuade me that I am in one. I know no pretentions a common acquaintance can have to lay afide the ce-· remonies of good breeding.' · Sure,' faid he, ' I am in a dream; for it is impossible I · fhould be really esteemed a common acquaintance by Leonora, after what has · passed between us!' · Passed between us! Do you intend to affront me before this gentleman?' D-n me, affront the lady,' fays Bellarmine, cocking his hat, and strutting up to Horatio, ' does any man dare affront this lady before me, d-n me?" · Harkee, Sir,' fays Horatio, ' I would advise you to lay aside that sierce air; for I am e mightily deceived, if this lady has not a violent defire to get your worship a good drubbing.' Sir,' faid Bellarmine, 'I have the honour to be her protector, and d---n me, if I understand your meaning.' 'Sir,' answered Horatio, ' she is rather your protectress: but give yourself no more airs, for you fee I am prepared for you,' (shaking his whip at him) ' Oh! Serviteur tres humble,' fays Bellarmine, ' je vous entend parfaitment bien.' At which time the aunt, who

]

W

u

bi

to

to

ed

raj

per

Be

WO

mo

an

Bel

firlt

whi

and

retu

es

n

1,

m

n

e-

id

I

C-

as

s!

113

y,'

it-

ire

e ?"

ife

m

a

od

ive

-- n

ir,

ro-

irs,

ing

le,

iit-

ho

had heard of Horatio's visit, entered the room, and foon fatisfied all his doubts. convinced him that he was never more awake in his life, and that nothing more extraordinary had happened in his three days absence, than a finall alteration in the affections of Leonora; who now burst into tears, and wondered what reason she had given him to use her in so barbarous a manner. Horatio defired Bellarmine to withdraw with him: but the ladies prevented it, by laying violent hands on the latter; upon which, the former took his leave without any great ceremony, and departed, leaving the lady with his rival to confult for his fafety, which Leonora feared her indifcretion might have endangered: but the aunt comforted her with affurances, that Horatio would not venture his: person against so accomplished a cavalier as: Bellarmine; and that, being a lawyer, he would feek revenge in his own way, and the most they had to apprehend from him was an action.

They at length therefore agreed to permit Bellarmine to retire to his lodgings, having first fettled all matters relating to the journey which he was to undertake in the morning, and their preparations for the nuptials at his return.

But alas! as wife men have observed, the

feat of valour is not the countenance; and many a grave and plain man, will, on a just provocation, betake himself to that mischievous metal, cold iron; while men of a siercer brow, and sometimes with that emblem of courage, a cockade, will more prudently decline it.

Leonora was waked in the morning, from a visionary coach and fix, with the dismal account, that Bellarmine was run through the body by Horatio; that he lay languishing at an inn, and the surgeons had declared the wound mortal. She immediately leaped out of the bed, danced about the room in a frantic manner, tore her hair, and beat her breast in all the agonies of despair; in which sad condition her aunt, who likewise arose at the news, found her. The good old lady applied her utmost art to comfort her niece. She told her, 'while there was life there was 'hope; but that if he should die, her assis-

tion would be of no fervice to Bellarmine,

.

, I

· b

6 41

' fl

· y

fi H

- and would only expose herself, which might probably keep her some time without any
 - future offer that as matters had happened.
- future offer; that as matters had happened,
- her wifest way would be to think no more of Bellarmine, but to endeavour to regain
- the affections of Horatio.' Speak not to
- " me,' cried the disconsolate Leonora; 'isit not
- owing to me, that poor Bellarmine has loft

nd

uit

ie-

cer

of

de-

om

nat

igh

ih-

red ped

n a

her

ich

ofe

adv

ece.

was Aic-

ine,

ght

any

ned,

ore

rain

t to

loft

his life? have not these cursed charms' (at ' which words she looked stedfastly in the ' glass) ' been the ruin of the most charming ' man of this age? Can I ever bear to con-' template my own face again?' (with her eyes still fixed on the glass? ' Am I not the ' murderess of the finest gentleman? No other woman in the town could have made ' any impression on him.' 'Never think of ' things past,' cries the aunt, ' think of res gaining the affections of Horatio.' What ' reason,' faid the niece, ' have I to hope he ' would forgive me? No, I have loft him as well as the other, and it was your wicked ' advice which was the occasion of all; you ' feduced me, contrary to my inclinations, to ' abandon poor Horatio,' at which words the burst into tears; 'you prevailed upon ' me, whether I would or no, to give up my ' affections for him; had it not been for you, ' Bellarmine never would have entered into 'my thoughts; had not his addresses been backed by your perfuations, they never ' would have made any impression on me; I ' should have defied all the fortune and equi-' page in the world; but it was you, it was ' you, who got the better of my youth and ' fimplicity, and forced me to lofe my dear ' Horatio for ever.'

The aunt was almost borne down with

this torrent of words; she however rallied all the strength she could, and drawing her mouth up in a purse, began: I am not furprised, niece, at this ingratitude. Those who advise young women for their interest, must always expect such a return : I am convinced my brother will thank me for breaking off your match with Horatio at any rate.' 'That may not be in your power yet,' answered Leonora; 'though, it is very ungrateful in you to defire or ' attempt it, after the prefents you have re-' ceived from him.' (For, indeed, true it is, that many prefents, and fome pretty valuable ones, had passed from Horatio to the old lady: but as true it is, that Bellarmine, when he breakfasted with her and her niece, had complimented her with a brilliant from his finger, of much greater value than all the had touched of the other.)

The aunt's gall was on float to reply, when a fervant brought a letter into the room; which Leonora, hearing it came from Bellarmine, with great eagerness opened, and

in

ne

it

cei

fuc

chi

mo

read as follows:

" Most divine creature,

THE wound which I fear you have heard I received from my rival, is not like to be so fatal as those shot into

"my heart, which have been fired from your eyes, tout-brilliant. Those are the only cannons by which I am to fall: for my furgeon gives me hopes of being soon able to attend your Ruelle; till when, unless you would do me an honour which I have fearce the hardiesse to think of, your absence will be the greatest anguish can be felt by,

" Madam,

ied

ing

not ofe

ite-

am for

at

our gh,

or re-

t is,

able

old hen

had

his

the

hen

om;

Bel-

and

have

il, is

into

" Avec tout le respecté in the world, "Your most obedient, most absolute " Devoté,

" BELLARMINE."

As foon as Leonora perceived such hopes of Bellarmine's recovery, and that the gossip Fame had, according to custom, so enlarged his danger, she presently abandoned all further thoughts of Horatio, and was soon reconciled to her aunt, who received her again into favour, with a more Christian forgiveness than we generally meet with. Indeed, it is possible, she might be a little alarmed at the hints which her niece had given her concerning the presents. She might apprehend such rumours, should they get abroad, might injure a reputation, which, by frequenting church twice a-day, and preserving the utmost rigour and strictness in her countenance

Vol. I. R

and behaviour for many years, she had established.

Leonora's passion returned now for Bellarmine with greater force after its fmall relaxation than ever. She proposed to her aunt to make him a vifit in his confinement, which the old lady, with great and commendable prudence, advised her to decline: 'For,' fays the, ' should any accident intervene to prevent your intended match, too forward a behaviour with this lover may injure you in the eyes of others. Every woman, till · fhe is married, ought to confider of and ' provide against the possibility of the affair's breaking off.' Leonora faid, the should be indifferent to whatever might happen in fuch a case; for she had now so absolutely placed her affections on this dear man, (fo the called him) that, if it was her misfortune to lofe him, she should for ever abandon all thoughts of mankind. She therefore refolved to vifit him, notwithstanding all the prudent advice of her aunt to the contrary, and that very afternoon executed her resolution.

fo

W

W

gi

of

ex

no

wa

tou

bea

him

mu

mif

mai

The Lady was proceeding in her story, when the coach drove into the inn where the company were to dine, forely to the distaisfaction of Mr Adams, whose ears were the most hungry part about him; he being, as the reader may perhaps guess, of an insatiable

JOSEPH ANDREWS. 195

curiofity, and heartily defirous of hearing the end of this amour, though he professed he could scarce wish success to a lady of so inconstant a disposition.

20

11'-

X-

nt

ole

iys re-

la

011

till

nd

ir's

ald

in

ely

(fo

une

all

fol-

ru-

and

on.

ory,

the

1115-

the

, as

able

C H A P. V.

A dreadful quarrel which happened at the inn where the company dined; with its bloody consequences to Mr Adams.

S foon as the paffengers had alighted from the coach, Mr Adams, as was his custom, made directly to the kitchen, where he found Joseph fitting by the fire, and the hostess anointing his leg: for the horse which Mr Adams had borrowed of his clerk, had fo violent a propensity to kneeling, that one would have thought it had been his trade as well as his mafter's: nor would he always give any notice of fuch hisintention: he was often found on his knees, when the rider least expected it. This foible, however, was of no great inconvenience to the parson, who was accustomed to it, and as his legs almost touched the ground when he bestrode the beaft, had but a little way to fall, and threw himself forward on such occasions with so much dexterity, that he never received any mischief; the horse and he frequently rolling many paces distance, and afterwards both

R 2

getting up and meeting as good friends as ever.

Poor Joseph, who had not been used to such kind of cattle, though an excellent horseman, did not so happily disengage himself; but falling with his leg under the beast, received a violent contusion, to which the good woman was, as we have said, applying a warm hand, with some camphorated spirits, just at the time when the parson entered the kitchen.

He had force expressed his concern for Joseph's missortune, before the host likewise entered. He was by no means of Mr Towwouse's gentle disposition, and was indeed perfect master of his house, and every thing

tv

ftr

th

Joho

to

per

OVE

me

Th

cou figu

gra

lool

in it but his guests.

This furly fellow, who always proportioned his respect to the appearance of a traveller, from, God bless your honour, down to plain, Coming presently, observing his wise on her knees to a sootman, cried out, without considering his circumstances, 'What a pox' is the woman about? why don't you mind the company in the coach? Go and ask

' them what they will have for dinner?'
' My dear,' fays she, ' you know they can
' have nothing but what is at the fire, which

will be ready prefently; and really the poor young man's leg is very much bruifed.

At which words she fell to chasing more vio-

JOSEPH ANDREWS. 197

lently than before: the bell then happening to ring, he damn'd his wife, and bid her go in to the company, and not stand rubbing there all day: for he did not believe the young fellow's leg was fo bad as he pretended; and if it was, within twenty miles he would find a furgeon to cut it off. Upon these words, Adams setched two strides across the room; and fnapping his fingers over his head, muttered aloud, 'He would excommu-' nicate fuch a wretch for a farthing; for he ' believed the devil had more humanity.' These words occasioned a dialogue between Adams and the hoft, in which there were two or three sharp replies, till Joseph bade the latter know how to behave himself to his betters. At which the host (having first strictly surveyed Adams) scornfully repeating the word betters, flew into a rage, and telling Joseph he was as able to walk out of his house as he had been to walk into it, offered to lay violent hands on him; which Adams perceiving, dealt him fo found a compliment over his face with his fift, that the blood immediately gushed out of his nose in a stream. The hoft being unwilling to be outdone in courtefy, especially by a person of Adams's figure, returned the favour with fo much gratitude, that the parson's nostrils began to look a little redder than usual. Upon which

n,

it

d

0-

m

at

n.

or

ife

- W

ed

ng

or-

ra-

wn ife

out

XOC

ind alk

r?"

can

ich

the

vio-

R 3

he again affailed his antagonist, and with another stroke laid him sprawling on the floor.

The hostefs, who was a better wife than fo furly a husband deserved, seeing her husband all bloody and stretched along, hastened presently to his assistance, or rather to revenge the blow, which, to all appearance, was the last he would ever receive; when, lo! a pan full of hog's blood, which un-Juckily stood on the dreffer, presented itself first to her hands. She seized it in her fury, and without any reflection, discharged it into the parson's face, and with so good an aim, that much the greater part first faluted his countenance, and trickled thence in fo large a current down to his beard, and over his garments, that a more horrible fpectacle was hardly to be feen, or even imagined. All which was perceived by Mrs Slipflop, who entered the kitchen at that instant. good gentlewoman, not being of a temper fo extremely cool and patient as perhaps was required to ask many questions on this occafion, flew with great impetuofity at the hoftess's cap, which, together with some of her hair, the plucked from her head in a moment, giving her at the fame time feveral hearty cuffs in the face, which, by frequent practice on the inferior fervants, she had learned an

tl

7

CC

th

he

an

ıf-

n-

re-

ce,

en,

ın-

lelf

ry,

nto

im,

his

rge

his

Was.

All

nho

This

per

was

ccahof-

her

ient,

arty

clice

d an

199

excellent knack of delivering with a good grace. Poor Joseph could hardly rise from his thair; the parson was employed in wiping the blood from his eyes, which had entirely blinded him, and the landlord was but just beginning to stir, whilst Mrs Slipslop, holding down the landlady's face with her left hand, made so dextrous an use of her right, that the poor woman began to roar in a key which alarmed all the company in the inn.

There happened to be in the inn at this time, befides the ladies who arrived in the stage-coach, the two gentlemen who were present at Mr Tow-wouse's when Joseph was detained for his horse's meat, and whom we have before-mentioned to have stopped at the ale-house with Adams. There was likewise a gentleman just arrived from his travels to Italy; all whom the horrid outcry of murder presently brought into the kitchen, where the several combatants were found in the postures already described.

It was now no difficulty to put an end to the fray, the conquerors being fatisfied with the vengeance they had taken, and the conquered having no appetite to renew the fight. The principal figure, and which engaged the eyes of all, was Adams, who was all over covered with blood, which the whole com-

pany concluded to be his own: and confequently imagined him to be no longer for this world. But the hoft, who had now recovered from his blow, and was rifen from the ground, foon delivered them from this apprehension, by damning his wife for wasting the hog's puddings, and telling her all would have been very well, if she had not intermeddled like a b— as she was; adding, he was very glad the gentlewoman had paid her, though not half what she had deserved. The poor woman had indeed fared much the worst, having, besides the unmerciful custs received, lost a quaintity of hair, which Mrs Slipslop in triumph held in her left hand.

The traveller, addressing himself to Mrs Grave-airs, desired her not to be frightned; for there had been only a little boxing, which he said, to their disgracia, the English were accustomata to: adding, it must be however a fight somewhat strange to him, who was just come from Italy, the Italians not being addicted to the custardo, but bastonza, says he. He then went up to Adams, and telling him he looked like the ghost of Othello, bid him not shake his gory locks at him, for he could not say he did it. Adams very innocently answered, 'Sir, I am far from accusting you.' He then returned to the lady, and cried, 'I find the bloody gentleman is

f t

' uno insipido del nullo senso. Dammata di me, if I have seen such a spectacule in my

' way from Viterbo.'

C-

115

r.

he

p-

18.

ld

d-

23

r,

he

he

ff's

rs

rs

1;

ch

re

er

as

15

ys 1g

id

he

0-

110

Y,

One of the gentlemen having learned from the host the occasion of this buille, and being affured by him that Adams had struck the first blow, whispered in his ear, he'd warrant he would recover. 'Recover, master,' faid the hoft, fmiling: ' yes, yes, I am not ' afraid of dying with a blow or two neither, 'I am not fuch a chicken as that.' 'Pugh!' faid the gentleman, 'I mean you will reco-' ver damages in that action, which undoubtedly you intend to bring, as foon as a writ can be returned from London; for you look like a man of too much spirit and ' courage to fuffer any one to beat you with-'out bringing your action against him: he ' must be a scandalous fellow indeed, who ' would put up a drubbing, whilst the law ' is open to revenge it; besides, he hath ' drawn blood from you, and spoiled your ' coat; and the jury will give damages for ' that too. An excellent new coat upon my ' word, and now not worth a shilling!'

'I don't care,' continued he, 'to inter-'meddle in these cases: but you have a right 'to my evidence; and if I am sworn, I must 'speak the truth. I saw you sprawling on the sloor, and the blood gushing from your

' nostrils. You may take your own opinion; but was I in your circumstances, every drop of my blood should convey an ounce of gold into my pocket; remember I don't advise you to go to law; but if your jury were Christians, they must give swinging ' damages. That's all.' 'Mafter,' cry'd the hoft, scratching his head, 'I have no stomach to law, I thank you. I have feen enough of that in the parish, where two of my ' neighbours have been at law about a house, ' till they have both lawed themselves into a ' goal.' At which words he turned about, and began to enquire again after his hog's puddings; nor would it probably have been a fufficient excuse for his wife, that she spilt them in his defence; had not fome awe of the company, especially of the Italian traveller, who was a person of great dignity, with-held his rage. Whilft one of the abovementioned gentlemen was employed, as we have feen him, on the behalf of the landlord, the other was no less hearty on the fide of Mr Adams, whom he advised to bring his action immediately. He faid, the affault of the wife was in law the affault of the husband; for they were but one person; and he was liable to pay damages, which he faid must be confiderable, where so bloody a disposition appeared. Adams answered, if it was true that

on; ery nce on't ary ing the

my
ife,
o a
ut,
g's
en
ilt

gh

y, rewe *

of

of of of of d;

as be be

they were but one person, he had affaulted the wife; for he was forry to own he had struck the husband the first blow. 'I am forry you own it too, cries the gentleman; for it could not possibly appear to the court: for here was no evidence prefent but the ' lame man in the chair, whom I suppose to be your friend, and would confequently ' fay nothing but what made for you.' ' How, Sir,' fays Adams, ' do you take me for a villain, who would profecute revenge ' in cold blood, and use unjustifiable means ' to obtain it? If you knew me and my order, 'I should think you affronted both.' the word order, the gentleman stared, (for he was too bloody to be of any modern order of knights), and turning hastily about, said, ' Every man knew his own business.'

Matters being now composed, the company retired to their several apartments, the two gentlemen congratulating each other on the success of their good offices, in procuring a perfect reconciliation between the contending parties; and the traveller went to his repast, crying, as the Italian poet says,

· Je voi very well, que tuta e pace,

' So fend up dinner, good Boniface.'

The coachman began now to grow importunate with his passengers, whose entrance

into the coach was retarded by Miss Graveairs infifting, against the remonstrance of all the rest, that she would not admit a footman into the coach; for poor Joseph was too lame to mount a horse. A young lady, who was, as it feems, an Earl's grand-daughter, begged it with tears in her eyes. Mr Adams prayed, and Mrs Slipflop scolded, but all to no purpose. She said she would not demean herself to ride with a footman: that there were waggens on the road: that if the mafter of the coach defired it, she would pay for two places, but would fuffer no fuch fellow to come in. 'Madam,' fays Slipflep, I am fure no one can refuse another com-' ing into a stage-coach.' 'I don't know, ' Madam,' fays the Lady, ' I am not much " used to stage-coaches, I seldom travel in ' them.' ' That may be, Madam,' replied Slipflop, 'very good people do, and fome ' people's betters, for aught I know.' Miss Grave-airs faid, Some folks might fometimes give their tongues a liberty, to some people that were their betters, which did not become them; for her part, she was not used to converse with servants. Slipslop returned, Some people kept no fervants to converse with: for her part, she thanked Heaven she lived in a family where there were a great many; and had more under her own com-

PI

mand, than any paultry little gentlewoman in the kingdom. Miss Grave-airs cried, She believed her mistress would not encourage such fauciness to her betters. 'My betters,' fays Slipslop, 'who is my betters, pray?' 'I am your betters,' answered Miss Grave-airs, and I will acquaint your Mistress.'—At which Mistress Slipslop laughed aloud, and told her, her lady was one of the great gentry, and such little paultry gentlewomen, as some folks who travelled in stage-coaches, would

not eafily come at her.

ve-

all

an

too

ho

er,

ins

to

ean

ere

lter

for

fel-

op,

m-

W,

ich

in

ied

me

lils

nes

ple

be-

fed

ed,

erle

fhe eat

m.

This finart dialogue between some people and some folks, was going on at the coach door, when a solemn person riding into the inn, and seeing Miss Grave-airs, immediately accosted her with, 'Dear child, how do you!' She presently answered, 'O! papa, I am 'glad you have overtaken me.' 'So am 'I,' answered he: 'for one of our coaches is 'just at hand: and there being room for you 'in it, you shall go no farther in the stage, 'unless you desire it.' 'How can you imagine 'I should desire it!' says she; so bidding Slipslop ride with her fellow, if she pleased, she took her father by the hand, who was just alighted, and walked with him into a room.

Adams inflantly asked the coachman in a whisper, if he knew who the gentleman was? Vol. I.

The coachman answered, he was now a gentleman, and kept his horse and man; 'but times are altered, master,' faid he; 'I remem-

ber when he was no better born than my-

' felf.' ' Ay ! ay !' fays Adams. ' My father

drove the fquire's coach,' answered he, when that very man rode possition: but he

is now his steward, and a great gentleman.'
Adams then snapped his singers, and cried,

He thought the was fome fuch trollop.

Adams made hafte to acquaint Mrs Slipflop with this good news, as he imagined it: but it found a reception different from what he expected. The prudent gentlewoman, who despised the anger of Miss Grave airs, whilft she conceived her the daughter of a gentleman of small fortune, now she heard her alliance with the upper fervants of a great family in her neighbourhood, began to fear her interest with the Mistress. She wished the had not carried the dispute fo far, and began to think of endeavouring to reconcile herfelf to the young lady before the left the inn; when luckily the scene at London, which the reader can scarce have forgotten, presented itself to her mind, and comforted her with fuch affurance, that she no longer apprehended any enemy with her mistress.

Every thing being now adjusted, the company entered the coach, which was just on a

7-

er

e, ie

1.

d,

7-

1;

at

n,

a

rd.

at

ar

ed

ad

ile

he

111,

en, ed

ger

m-

on

its departure, when one lady recollected shehad left her fan, a second her gloves, a third a snuff-box, and a sourth a smelling-bottle behind her; to find all which occasioned some delay, and much swearing to the coach man.

As foon as the coach had left the inn, the women altogether fell to the character of Miss Grave-airs, whom one of them declared she had suspected to be some low creature, from the beginning of their journey; and another affirmed, had not even the looks of a gentlewoman; a third warranted she was no better than the should be; and turning to the lady who had related the story in the coach, faid, ' Did you ever hear, Madam, any thing fo prudish as her remarks? Well, deliver me from the censoriousness ' of fuch a prude.' The fourth added, 'O ' Madam! all these creatures are censorious: but for my part, I wonder where the wretch was bred; indeed I must own I ' have feldom converfed with these mean ' kind of people; fo that it may appear ' stranger to me; but to refuse the general ' defire of a whole company had fomething in it fo aftonishing, that for my part, I own I should hardly believe it, if my own ears had not been witnesses to it.' 'Yes, and fo handsome a young fellow,' cries.

S 2

Slipflop: ' the woman must have no com-' pulsion in her, I believe she is more of a ' Turk than a Christian; I am certain, if ' she had any Christian woman's blood in her veins, the fight of fuch a young fellow · must have warmed it. Indeed there are ' fome wretched, miserable old objects, that ' turn one's stomach; I should not wonder if the had refused such a one; I am as ' nice as herfelf, and should have cared no · more than herfelf for the company of flinking old fellows: but hold up thy head, ' Joseph, thou art none of those; and the who hath not compulsion for thee is a ' Myhummetman, and I will maintain it." This conversation made Joseph uneasy, as well as the ladies; who perceiving the spirits which Mrs Slipslop was in, (for indeed the was not a cup too low), began to fear the confequence; one of them therefore defired the Lady to conclude the story- 'Ay, ' Madam,' faid Slipflop, ' I beg your Lady-· fhip to give us that story you commensated ' in the morning;' which request that wellbred woman immediately complied with.

g

al

co

ch

an

pa

ac

a-0

att

the ed, hav oth the even

C H A P. VI.

f

n

e

r

IS

0

-

1,

ne

2

t."

25

ts

he

ne

ed

y,

y-

ed

ir.

Conclusion of the unfortunate jilt.

LEONOR A having once broke thro' the bounds which custom and modesty impose on her sex, soon gave an unbridled indulgence to her passion. Her visits to Bellarmine were more constant, as well as longer, than his surgeon's; in a word, she became absolutely his nurse, made his watergruel, administered him his medicines, and notwithstanding the prudent advice of her aunt to the contrary, almost entirely resided in his medicines.

in her wounded lover's apartment.

The ladies of the town began to take her conduct under confideration; it was the chief topic of discourse at their tea-tables, and was very severely censured by the most part; especially by Lindamira, a lady whose discreet and starch carriage, together with a constant attendance at church three times a-day, had utterly deseated many malicious attacks on her own reputation; for such was the envy that Lindamira's virtue had attracted, that notwithstanding her own strict behaviour, and strict enquiry into the lives of others, she had not been able to escape being the mark of some arrows herself, which however did her no injury; a blessing perhaps.

owed by her to the clergy, who were her chief male companions, and with two or three of whom the had been barbaroufly and unjustly calumniated.

'Not so unjustly neither, perhaps,' says Slipstop, ' for the clergy are men, as well as

other folks.'

The extreme delicacy of Lindamira's virtue was cruelly hurt by those freedoms which Leonora allowed herself: she said, it was an affront to her fex; that she did not imagine it consistent with any woman's honour to speak to the creature, or to be seen in her company; and that for her part, she should always resuse to dance at an assembly with her, for fear of contamination by taking her by the hand.

But to return to my story: as soon as Bellarmine was recovered, which was somewhat within a month from his receiving the wound, he set out, according to agreement, for Leonora's father's, in order to propose the match, and settle all matters with him touching

d

Y

th

DO

ce

fettlements, and the like.

A little before his arrival, the old gentleman had received an intimation of the affair by the following letter; which I can repeat verbatim, and which, they fay, was written neither by Leonora nor her aunt, though it

JOSEPH ANDREWS. 2111 was in a woman's hand. The letter was in these words:

"SIR,

ier

or

ays

as

VITA

nns

not

ho-

een

the

bly

ing

Bel-

vhat

und,

tch,

hing

ntleffair

peat

itten gh it " A M forry to acquaint you, that your daughter Leonora hath acted one of the basest, as well as most simple parts with a young gentleman to whom she had engaged herself, and whom she hath, (pardon the word) jilted for another of inforior fortune, notwithstanding his superior figure. You may take what measures you please on this occasion; I have performed what I thought my duty; as I have, tho unknown to you, a very great respect for your family."

The old gentleman did not give himself the trouble to answer this kind epistle; nor did he take any notice of it after he had read it, till he saw Bellarmine. He was, to say the truth, one of those fathers who look on children as an unhappy consequence of their youthful pleasures: which as he would have been delighted not to have had attended them, so was he no less pleased with any opportunity to rid himself of the incumbrance. He passed, in the world's language, as an exceeding good father, being not only so rapacious as to rob and plunder all mankind to

the utmost of his power, but even to deny himself the conveniencies and almost necesfaries of life; which his neighbours attributed to a defire of raising immense fortunes to his children; but in fact it was not fo: he heaped up money for its own fake only, and looked on his children as his rivals, who were to enjoy his beloved mistress, when he was incapable of poffesting her, and which he would have been much more charmed with the power of carrying along with him: nor had his children any other fecurity of being his heirs, than that the law would constitute them fuch without a will, and that he had not affection enough for any one living to take the trouble of writing one.

01

pl

n

ev

for

for

hir

be

· d

fro

vag

equi

arri

To this gentleman came Bellarmine on the errand I have mentioned. His person, his equipage, his family, and his estate, seemed to the father to make him an advantageous match for his daughter; he therefore very readily accepted his proposals: but when Bellarmine imagined the principal affair concluded, and began to open the incidental matters of fortune, the old gentleman presently changed his countenance, saying, he resolved never to marry his daughter on a Smithfield match; that whoever had love for her to take her, would, when he died, sind her share of his fortune in his coffers;

but he had feen fuch examples of undutifulny ness happen from the too early generofity of efparents, that he had made a vow never to ripart with a shilling whilst he lived. He comnes mended the faying of Solomon, " He that " fpareth the rod spoileth the child:" but he nd added, he might have likewife afferted, that ere he that spareth the purse saveth the child. vas He then can into a discourse on the extravahe gance of the youth of the age; whence he ith launched into a differtation on horses, and nor came at length to commend those Bellarmine ing That fine gentleman, who, at anute other feafon, would have been well enough had pleased to dwell a little on that subject, was to now very eager to resume the circumstance of fortune. He faid, he had a very high value for the young lady, and would receive on on, her with less than he would any other whatemever: but that even his love to her made gefome regard to worldly matters necessary; for it would be a most distracting fight for ore but him to fee her, when he had the honour to afbe her husband, in lefs than a coach and fix. nci-The old gentleman answered, ' Four will ' do, four will do;' and then took a turn nan ing, from horses to extravagance, and from extraon vagance to horses, till he came round to the ove equipage again, whither he was no fooner ied, arrived, than Bellarmine brought him back

ers;

to the point; but all to no purpose; he made his escape from that subject in a minute; till at last the lover declared, that in the present fituation of his affairs, it was impossible for him, though he loved Leonora more than tout le monde, to marry her without any for-To which the father answered, he was forry then his daughter must lose so valuable a match; that if he had an inclination, at present it was not in his power to advance a shilling: that he had had great losses, and been at great expences on projects, which though he had great expectation from them, had yet produced him nothing: that he did not know what might happen hereafter, as on the birth of a fon, or fuch accident; but he would make no promise, or enter into any article: for he would not break his vow for all the daughters in the world.

In short, ladies, to keep you no longer in suspense, Bellarmine having tried every argument and persuasion which he could invent, and finding them all ineffectual, at length took his leave, but not in order to return to Leonora; he proceeded directly to his own seat, whence, after a few days stay, he returned to Paris, to the great delight of the French, and the honour of the English nation.

..

th

as

th

But as foon as he arrived at his home, he presently dispatched a messenger with the following epittle to Leonora.

" Adorable and Charmante,

" I AM forry to have the honour to tell " you I am not the heureux person de-" flined for your divine arms. Your papa " hath told me fo with a politesse not often " feen on this fide Paris. You may perhaps " guess his manner of resusing me-Ah mon " dieu! You will certainly believe me, Ma-" dam, incapable myfelf of delivering this " trifle message, which I intend to try the " French air to cure the confequences of----" A jamais! Cour! Ange!--- Au diable!----" If your Papa obliges you to a marriage, " I hope we shall see you at Paris, till when " the wind that blows from thence will be " the warmest dans la monde: for it will " confift almost entirely of my fighs. Adieu " mu princese! Ab l'amour!

BELLARMINE."

I shall not attempt, ladies, to describe Leonora's condition when she received this letter. It is a picture of horror, which I should have had as little pleasure in drawing as you in beholding. She immediately less the place, where she was the subject of con-

le

111

nt

or

r-

he

a-

2-

to

at

ts,

m

at

re-

ci-

or

ot

the

in

ar-

in-

at to

ays

de-

the

versation and ridicule, and retired to that house I shewed you when I began the story; where she hath ever since led a disconsolate life, and deserves perhaps pity for her missortunes, more than our censure for a behaviour to which the artifices of her aunt very probably contributed, and to which very young women are often rendered too liable by that blameable levity in the education of our fex.

'If I was inclined to pity her,' faid a young lady in the coach, 'it would be for the loss of Horatio; for I cannot differn any misfortune in her missing such a hus-

band as Bellarmine.'

'Why, I must own,' fays Slipslop, 'the gentleman was a little false-hearted: but

howsomever it was hard to have two lovers,

and get never a husband at all. But pray,

Madam, what became of our Our-asho?"

He remains, faid the lady, still unmarried, and hath applied himself so strictly to his business, that he hath raised, I hear, a very considerable fortune. And what is remarkable, they say, he never hears the name of Leonora without a sigh, nor hath ever uttered one syllable to charge her with her ill conduct towards him.

qu

 f_{01}

pa

fw.

C H A P. VII.

Avery short chapter, in which Parson Adams went a great way.

e

1-

·y

y

le

ot

2

or

rn

ıf-

he

ut

1'5,

ay,

ed,

his

ery

rk-

of

ut-

ill

HE lady having finished her story, received the thanks of the company; and now Joseph, putting his head out of the coach, cried out, 'Never believe me, if yonder be not our parson Adams walking a-' long without his horse.' 'On my word, ' and fo he is,' fays Slipflop; ' and as fure as two-pence, he hath left him behind at ' the inn.' Indeed, true it is, the parson had exhibited a fresh instance of his absence of mind: for he was fo pleased with having got Joseph into the coach, that he never once thought of the beaft in the stable; and finding his legs as nimble as he defired, he fallied out brandishing a crab-stick, and had kept on before the coach, mending and flackening his pace occasionally, so that he had never been much more or less than a quarter of a mile distant from it.

Mrs Slipflop defired the coachman to overtake him, which he attempted, but in vain: for the faster he drove, the faster ran the parson, often crying out, 'Ay, ay, eatch me 'if' you can:' till at length the coach nan stwore he would as soon attempt to drive as-

Vol. I. T

ter a greyhound; and giving the parson two or three hearty curses, he cried, 'Softly, 'fostly, boys,' to his horses, which the civil

beafts immediately obeyed.

But we will be more courteous to our reader than he was to Mrs Slipflop; and leaving the coach and its company to purfue their journey, we will carry our reader on after Adams, who stretched forwards without once looking behind him; till having left the coach full three miles in his rear, he came to a place, where, by keeping the extremest tract to the right, it was just barely possible for a human creature to mis his way. This tract however did he keep, as indeed he had a wonderful capacity at these kinds of bare possibilities; and travelling in it about three miles over the plain, he arrived at the fummit of a hill, whence, looking a great way backwards, and perceiving no coach in fight, he fat himself down on the turf, and pulling out his Æschylus, determined to wait here for its arrival.

He had not fat long here, before a gun going off very near, a little startled him; he looked up, and faw a gentleman within a hundred paces taking up a partridge, which

he had just shot.

Alims stood up, and presented a figure to the gentleman which would have moved of

laughter in many: for his cassock had just again fallen down below his great coat, that is to say, it reached his knees; whereas, the skirts of his great coat descended no lower than half way down his thighs: but the gentleman's mirth gave way to his surprise, at beholding such a personage in such a place.

0

r

d

ne

1-

8

10

Y -

ly

115

as

le

in

i-

ng

no

he

11-

un

he

1 8

ich

ire

red

Adams, advancing to the gentleman, told him he hoped he had good fport; to which the other answered, 'Very little.' 'I see, 'Sir,' says Adams, 'you have smote one 'partridge;' to which the sportsman made no reply, but proceeded to charge his piece.

Whilst the gun was charging, Adams remained in filence, which he at last broke, by observing, that it was a delightful evening. The gentleman, who had at first fight conceived a very distasteful opinion of the parson, began, on perceiving a book in his hand, and smoaking likewise the information of the cassock, to change his thoughts, and made a small advance to conversation on his side, by saying, 'Sir, I suppose you are not one of these parts?'

Adams immediately told him, No: that he was a traveller, and invited by the beauty of the evening and the place to repose a little and amuse himself with reading. 'I may as well repose myself too,' said the sports-

man; 'for I have been out this whole after'noon, and the devil a bird have I feen till
'I came hither.'

· Perhaps then the game is not very plenty hereabouts,' cries Adams. 'No, Sir,' faid the gentleman; 'the foldiers, who are quar-' tered in the neighbourhood, have killed it ' all.' 'It is very probable,' cries Adams; for shooting is their profession.' 'Aye, ' thooting the game,' answered the other, but I don't fee they are fo forward to shoot our enemies. I don't like that affair of ' Carthagena; if I had been there, I believe · I should have done other-guess things, d-n me; what's a man's life when his country demands it? a man who won't facrifice his life for his country, deferves to be hang'd, d-n me.' Which words he fpoke with fo violent a gesture, fo loud a voice, fo strong an accent, and fo fierce a countenance, that he might have frightened a captain of trained-bands at the head of his company; but Mr Adams was not greatly fubject to fear: he told him intrepidly, that he very much approved his virtue, but difliked his fwearing, and begged him not to addict himself to so bad a custom, without which he faid he might fight as bravely as Achilles did. Indeed he was charmed with this discourse: he told the gentleman, He

would willingly have gone many miles to have met a man of his generous way of thinking; that if he pleafed to fit down, he should be greatly delighted to commune with him: for though he was a clergyman, he would himself be ready, if thereto called, to lay down his life for his country.

V

.

t

.

2,

,

t

fe

S,

1-

0

e

2

3

d

is

y

it

1-

0

16

RS

h

e

The gentleman fat down, and Adams by him; and then the latter began, as in the following chapter, a discourse which we have placed by itself, as it is not only the most curious in this, but perhaps in any other book,

C H A P. VIII.

A notable differ ation by Mr Abraham Adams; wherein that gentleman appears in a political light.

the gentleman by the hand, 'I am heartily glad to meet with a man of your kidney: for though I am a poor parson, I will
be bold to say, I am an honest man, and
would not do an ill thing to be made a bishop: nay, though it hath not fallen in my
way to offer so noble a facrifice. I have not
been without opportunities of suffering for
the sake of my conscience, I thank Heaven
for them; for I have had relations, though
I say it, who made some figure in the

world; particularly a nephew, who was a ' shop-keeper, and an alderman of a corporation. He was a good lad, and was under my care when a boy, and I believe would do what I bade him to his dying day. Indeed, it looks like extreme vanity in me, to affect being a man of fuch confequence, as to have fo great an interest in an alderman: ' but others have thought fo too, as mani-' feftly appeared by the rector, whose curate ' I formerly was, fending for me on the ap-' proach of an election, and telling me, If I expected to continue in his cure, that I must bring my nephew to vote for one Colonel ' Courtly, a gentleman whom I had never ' heard tidings of till that instant. I told the rector, I had no power over my nephew's ' vote, (God forgive me for fuch prevarica-" tion!) that I supposed he would give it according to his conscience; that I would by no means endeavour to influence him to give it otherwise. He told me, It was in vain to equivocate: that he knew I had ' already spoke to him in favour of Esquire ' Fickle my neighbour; and indeed it was ' true I had: for it was at a feafon when ' the church was in danger, and when all ' good men expected they knew not what would happen to us all. I then answered boldly, If he thought I had given my pno-

* mise, he affronted me, in proposing any breach of it. Not to be too prolix; I perfevered, and fo did my nephew, in the · Esquire's interest, who was chosen chiefly through his means; and fo I lost my cu-' racy. Well, Sir, but do you think the ''fquire ever mentioned a word of the church? Ne verbum quidem, ut ita dicam; within ' two years he got a place, and hath ever fince lived in London; where I have been informed (but God forbid I should believe ' that) that he never fo much as goeth to 'church. I remained, Sir, a confiderable time without any cure, and lived a full month on one funeral fermon, which I-' preached on the indisposition of a clergyman: but this by the bye. At last, when ' Mr Fickle got his place, Colonel Courtly ' flood again; and who should make interest for him but Mr Fickle himself? that very identical Mr Fickle, who had formerly told " me, the Colonel was an enemy both to the ' church and state, had the confidence to ' follicit my nephew for him; and the Co-' lonel himself offered me to make me cha-' plain to his regiment, which I refused in favour of Sir Oliver Hearty, who told us he would facrifice every thing to his coun-' try; and I believe he would, except his ' hunting, which he stuck so close to, that

S

1

S

ì

· in five years together he went but twice up to parliament; and one of those times, I have been told, never was within fight of the house. However, he was a worthy man, and the best friend I ever had: for by his interest with a bishop, he got me re-· placed into my curacy, and gave me eight · pounds out of his own pocket to buy me a ' gown and cassock, and furnish my house. " He had our interest while he lived, which was not many years. On his death I had · fresh applications made to me; for all the ' world knew the interest I had with my ' good nephew, who now was a leading man ' in the corporation; and Sir Thomas Booby buying the effate which had been Sir Oliver's, proposed himself a candidate. He was then a young gentleman just come from ' his travels; and it did me good to hear ' him discourse on affairs, which, for my part, I knew nothing of If I had been · master of a thousand votes, he should have ' had them all. I engaged my nephew in ' his interest; and he was elected, and a very fine parliament-man he was. They tell ' me he made speeches of an hour long; and 'I have been told very fine ones: but he could never perfuade the parliament to be of his opinion .-- Non omnia posimus our nes. He promised me a living, poor man;

.

(

· t

s t

JOSEPH ANDREWS. 225

I

y

r

2 -

d

ie

iy

112

y

i-

Te

m

21

ay

113

ve

in

ľУ

ell

nd

he

be

n/a

11 3

and I believe I should have had it, but an ' accident happened; which was, that my Lady had promised it before, unknown to him. This indeed I never heard till afterwards: for my nephew, who died about a month before the incumbent, always told ' me I might be affured of it. Since that time, Sir Thomas, poor man, had always fo much bufiness, that he never could find ' leifure to fee me. I believe it was partly 'my Lady's fault too, who did not think my drefs good enough for the gentry at her ' table. However, I must do him the justice to fay, he never was ungrateful; and I have ' always found his kitchen, and his cellar ' too, open to me; many a time after service on a Sunday, for I preach at four churches, have I recruited my spirits with a glass of ' his ale. Since my nephew's death, the corporation is in other hands; and I am ' not a man of that consequence I was for-' merly. I have now no longer any talents ' to lay out in the fervice of my country; and ' to whom nothing is given, of him can no-' thing be required. However, on all pro-' per feasons, such as the approach of an ' election, I throw a fuitable dash or two in-' to my fermons; which I have the pleasure ' to hear is not disagreeable to Sir Thomas and the other honeit gentlemen my neigh-

bours, who have all promifed me these five years, to procure an ordination for a fon of mine, who is now near thirty, hath an · infinite stock of learning, and is, I thank · Heaven, of an unexceptionable life; tho', as he was never at an univerfity, the bishop refuses to ordain him. Too much care cannot indeed be taken in admitting any · to the facred office; though I hope he will · never act so as to be a disgrace to any or-· der; but will ferve his God and his coun-' try to the utmost of his power, as I have endeavoured to do before him; nav, and ' will lav down his life whenever called to · that purpose. I am sure I have educated · him in those principles; fo that I have acquitted my duty, and shall have nothing • to answer for on that account; but I do onot distrust him: for he is a good boy; and, if Providence should throw it in his way to be of as much consequence in a pu-· blic light, as his father once was, I can an-· fwer for him, he will use his talents as ho-

" neftly as I have done."

C. H A P. IX.

C

n

P

e

y

1 -

e

d

0

.

0

S

1-

) =

In which the gentleman descants on bravery and heroic virtue, till an unlucky accident puts an end to the discourse.

HE gentleman highly commended Mr Adams for his good refolutions, and told him, He hoped his fon would tread in his steps; adding, that if he would not die for his country, he would not be worthy to live in it. 'I'd make no more of shooting a 'man that would not die for his country, than—'

'Sir,' faid he, 'I have difinherited a ' nephew who is in the army; because he would not exchange his commission, and ' go to the Welt Indies. I believe the rascal is a coward, though he pretends to be in ' love for footh. I would have all fuch fellows ' hanged, Sir; I would have them hanged.' Adams answered, 'That would be too fevere; that men did not make themselves; and if fear had too much atcendance in the ' mind, the man was rather to be pitied than 'abhorred; that reason and time might ' teach him to fubdue it.' He faid, ' a man ' might be a coward at one time, and brave 'at another. Homer,' fays he, 'who fo well understood and copied nature, hath

' taught us this lesson; for Paris fights, and · Hector runs away: nay, we have a mighty ' instance of this in the history of later ages, ono longer ago than the 705th year of ' Rome, when the great Pompey, who had won fo many battles, and been honoured with fo many triumphs, and of whose va-· lour feveral authors, especially Cicero and · Paterculus, have formed fuch eulogiums; this very Pompey left the battle of Phar-' falia before he had loft it, and retreated to his tent, where he fat like the most pusila-· nimous rascal in a fit of despair, and yielded a victory, which was to determine the empire of the world, to Cafar. I am not " much travelled in the history of modern times, that is to fay, these last thousand ' years: but those who are can, I make no ' question, furnish you with parallelinstances.' He concluded therefore, that had he taken any fuch hasty resolutions against his nephew, he hoped he would confider better, and retract them. The gentleman answered with great warmth, and talked much of courage and his country, till perceiving it grew late, he asked Adams, ' what place he intended ' for that night?' He told him, ' he waited ' there for the stage-coach.' 'The stage-' coach! Sir,' faid the gentleman, ' they are all past by long ago. You may see the

1

nd

nty ses,

ot

ad

ra-

nd

15;

ır-

to

a-

d-

lie

ot

n

d

0

11

,

C

* last yourself almost three miles before us.' ' I protest and so there are,' cries Adams, then I must make haste and follow them.' The gentleman told him, he would hardly be able to overtake them; and that if he did not know his way, he would be in danger of losing himself on the downs; for it would be prefently dark; and he might ramble about all night, and, perhaps, find himself farther from his journey's end in the morning than he was now. He advised him therefore to accompany him to his house, which was very little out of his way, affuring him, that he would find fome country-fellow in his parith, who would conduct him for fixpence to the city where he was going. Adams accepted this propofal, and on they travelled, the gentleman renewing the discourse on courage, and the infamy of not being ready at all times to facrifice our lives to our coun-Night overtook them much about the fame time as they arrived near some bushes: whence, on a fudden, they heard the most violent shrieks imaginable in a female voice. Adams offered to fnatch the gun out of his companion's hand. 'What are you doing?' faid he, ' Doing !' fays Adams, ' I am ha-' stening to the assistance of the poor creature whom fome villains are murdering.' 'You are not mad enough, I hope,' fays

the gentleman, trembling: ' Do you confider this gun is only charged with shot, and that the robbers are most probably furnished with pistols loaded with bullets? 'This is no business of ours; let us make s as much hafte as possible out of the way, or we may fall into their hands ourselves.' The shrieks now increasing, Adams made no answer, but fnapt his fingers, and brandishing his crabitick, made directly to the place whence the voice issued; and the man of courage made as much expedition towards his own home, whither he escaped in a very fhort time without once looking behind him: where we will leave him, to contemplate his own bravery, and to cenfure the want of it in others; and return to the good Adams, who, on coming up to the place whence the noise proceeded, found a woman struggling with a man, who had thrown her on the ground, and had almost overpowered her. The great abilities of Mr Adams were not necessary to have formed a right judgment of this affair on the first fight. He did not therefore want the entreaties of the poor wretch to affift her; but lifting up his crabstick, he immediately levelled a blow at that part of the ravisher's head, where, according to the opinion of the ancients, the brains of fome persons are deposited, and which he

11-

ot,

ly

s?

ke

y,

s.'

10

1-

ce

of

Is

y

.

is

t

had undoubtedly let forth, had not Nature (who, as wife men have observed, equips all creatures with what is most expedient for them) taken a provident care (as she always doth with those she intends for encounters) to make this part of the head three times as thick as those of ordinary men, who are defigned to exercife talents which are vulgarly called rational, and for whom, as brains are necessary, she is obliged to leave some room for them in the cavity of the skull: whereas, those ingredients being entirely useless to persons of the heroic calling, the hath an opportunity of thickening the bone, fo as to make it less subject to any impression, or liable to be cracked or broken; and indeed, in some who are predestined to the command of armies and empires, she is supposed sometimes to make that part perfectly folid.

As a game-cock, when engaged in amorous toying with a hen, if perchance he espies another cock at hand, immediately quits his female, and opposes himself to his rival; so did the ravisher, on the information of the crabstick, immediately leap from the woman, and hasten to affail the man. He had no weapons but what Nature had furnished him However, he clenched his fift, and presently darted it at that part of Adams's breast where the heart is lodged. Adams

U 2 '

staggered at the violence of the blow, when, throwing away his staff, he likewise clenched that fift which we have before commemorated, and would have discharged it full in the breast of his antagonist, had he not dextroufly caught it with his left hand, at the fame time darting his head, (which fome modern heroes of the lower class use, like the battering-ram of the Ancients, for a weapon of offence; another reason to admire the cunningness of Nature, in composing it of those impenetrable materials), dashing his head, I fay, into the stomach of Adams, he tumbled him on his back, and not having any regard to the laws of heroifm, which would have restrained him from any farther attack on his enemy till he was again on his legs, he threw himfelf upon him, and laying hold on the ground with his left hand, he with his right belaboured the body of Adams till he was weary, and indeed till he concluded (to use the language of fighting) that he had done his bufiness; or in the language of poetry, that he had fent him to the shades below; in plain English, that he was dead.

But Adams, who was no chicken, and could bear a drubbing as well as any boxing champion in the universe, lay still only to watch his opportunity; and now perceiving his antagonist to pant with his labours, he

JOSEPH ANDREWS. 233

exerted his utmost force at once, and with fuch fuccess, that he overturned him, and became his fuperior; when fixing one of his knees in his breaft, he cried out in an exulting voice, 'It is my turn now;' and after a few minutes constant application, he gave him fo dextrous a blow just under his chin, that the fellow no longer retained any motion, and Adams began to fear he had struck him once too often; for he often afferted, He should be concerned to have the:

blood of even the wicked upon him.

n,

ed

a-

he

X-

he

ne

ke

a-

re

it

is

e

r

is

8

e

S

-

t

e

Adams got up, and called aloud to the young woman, -- Be of good cheer, dam-' fel,' faid he, ' you are no longer in danger of your ravisher, who, I am terribly afraid, ' lyes dead at my feet; but God forgive me ' what I have done in defence of innocence,' The poor wretch, who had been some time in recovering strength enough to rife, and had afterwards, during the engagement, stood trembling, being disabled by fear, even from running away, hearing her champion was victorious, came up to him, but not without apprehensions, even of her deliverer; which, however, she was soon relieved from, by his courteous behaviour and gentle words. They were both standing by the body, which lay motionless on the ground, and which Adams wished to see stir much more than the

woman did, when he earnestly begged her to tell him, by what misfortune she came, at fuch a time of night, into fo lonely a place? She acquainted him, She was travelling towards London, and had accidentally met with the person from whom he had delivered her, who told her he was likewise on his journey to the same place, and would keep her company: an offer which, suspecting no harm, she had accepted: that he told her, they were at a fmall distance from an inn where the might take up her lodging that evening, and he would fhew her a nearer way to it than by following the road. That if the had suspected him, (which she did not, he fpoke fo kindly to her), being alone on these downs in the dark, she had no human means to avoid him; that therefore she put her whole trust in Providence, and walked on, expecting every moment to arrive at the inn; when, on a sudden, being come to those bushes, he defired her to stop, and after some rude kisses, which she resisted, and some entreaties, which she rejected, he laid violent hands on her, and was attempting to execute his wicked will, when, the thanked God, he timely came up, and prevented him. Adams encouraged her for faying the had put her whole trust in Providence, and told her, He doubted not but Providence had fent him to

er at

e?

olet

ed

118

ep

no

er,

at

ay if

ot,

nc

an

ut

ed

he

ne

1-

nt

te

ne

ns er

Ie

0

her deliverance, as a reward for that trust. He wished, indeed, he had not deprived the wicked wretch of life, but God's will be done; he said, He hoped the goodness of his intention would excuse him in the next world, and he trusted in her evidence to acquit him in this. He was then silent, and began to consider with himself, whether it would be proper to make his escape, or to deliver himself into the hands of justice; which meditation ended as the reader will see in the next chapter.

CHAP. X.

Giving an account of the strange catastrophe of the preceding adventure, which drew poor Adams into fresh calamities; and who the woman was who owed the preservation of her chastity to his victorious arm.

THE filence of Adams, added to the darkness of the night, and loneliness of the place, struck dreadful apprehensions into the poor woman's mind: she began to fear as great an enemy in her deliverer, as he had delivered her from; and as she had not light enough to discover the age of Adams, and the benevolence visible in his countenance, she suspected he had used her as some very honest men have used their country; and

had rescued her out of the hands of one rifler. in order to rifle her himself. Such were the fuspicions she drew from his silence: but indeed they were ill-grounded. He stood over his vanquished enemy, wisely weighing in his mind, the objections which might be made to either of the two methods of proceeding mentioned in the last chapter, his judgment sometimes inclining to the one, and fometimes to the other; for both feemed to him fo equally adviseable, and so equally dangerous, that probably he would have ended his days, at least two or three of them, on that very spot, before he had taken any resolution: at length he lifted up his eyes, and spied a light at a distance, to which he instantly addressed himfelf with Heus tu, Traveller, heus tu! He prefently heard feveral voices, and perceived the light approaching toward him. The perfons who attended the light began fome to laugh, others to fing, and others to hallow, at which the woman testified some fear, (for she had concealed her suspicions of the Parson himself,) but Adams said, 'Be of good cheer, · Damfel, and repose thy trust in the same. · Providence which hath hitherto protected thee, and never will forfake the innocent.' These people who now approached were no other, Reader, than a fet of young fellows, who came to these bushes in pursuit of a di-

e

n

d

version which they call Bird-batting. This,

if thou art ignorant of it (as perhaps, if thou

fler, the inver his to enneto illy roaft beth ta m-·ehe ns h, ch d 1r, ne d

0

halt never travelled beyond Kenfington, Islington, Hackney, or the Borough, thou mayst be) I will inform thee, is performed by holding a large clap net before a lanthorn, and at the fame time beating the bushes: for the birds, when they are disturbed from their places of reft, or rooft, immediately make to the light, and fo are enticed within the net. Adams immediately told them what happened, and defired them to hold the lanthorn to the face of the man on the ground, for he feared he had fmote him fatally. But indeed his fears were frivolous; for the fellow, tho' he had been stunned by the last blow he received, had long fince recovered his fenfes, and finding himfelf quit of Adams, had liftened attentively to the discourse between him and the young woman; for whose departure he had patiently waited, that he might likewife withdraw himfelf, having no longer hopes of fucceeding in his defires, which were moreover almost as well cooled by Mr Adams, as they could have been by the young woman herself had he obtained his utmost This fellow, who had a readiness at improving any accident, thought he might now play a better part than that of a dead

man; and accordingly, the moment the can-

dle was held to his face, he leaped up, and laying hold on Adams, cried out, 'No, Vil-· lain, I am not dead, though you and your wicked whore might well think me fo, after the barbarous cruelties you have exer-' cised on me. Gentlemen,' said he, ' you are luckily come to the affiftance of a poor ' traveller, who would otherwise have been frobbed and murdered by this vile man and woman, who led me hither out of my way from the high-road, and both falling on · me have used me as you fee.' Adams was going to answer, when one of the young fellows cried, 'D—n them, let's carry them both before the justice.' The poor woman began to tremble, and Adams lifted up his voice, but in vain. Three or four of them laid hands on him, and one holding the lanthorn to his face, they all agreed, He had the most villainous countenance they ever beheld; and an attorney's clerk who was of the company declared, He was fure he had remembered him at the bar. As to the woman, her hair was dishevelled in the struggle; and her nofe had bled, fo that they could not perceive whether she was handsome or ugly, but they faid her fright plainly discovered her guilt. And fearthing her pockets, as they did those of Adams, for money, which the fellow faid he had loft, they found in her pocket a purse

with vin to no the he

all

the the ra be th

in A

ba

pi 8

with fome gold in it, which abundantly convinced them, especially as the fellow offered to fwear to it. Mr Adams was found to have no more than one halfpenny about him. This, the clerk faid, was a great prefumption that he was an old offender, by cunningly giving all the booty to the woman. To which all

the rest readily assented.

and

Til-

our

af-

er-

OU

or

en

nd

ay

on

as

el-

m

n

is

m

1-

ie

1;

1-

1-

r

r

e

This accident promifing them better fport than what they had proposed, they quitted their intention of catching birds, and unanimoufly refolved to proceed to the justice with the offenders. Being informed what a desperate fellow Adams was, they tied his hands behind him; and having hid their nets among the bushes, and the lanthorn being carried before them, they placed the two prisoners in their front, and then began their march: Adams not only fubmitting patiently to his own fate, but comforting and encouraging his companion under her fufferings.

Whillt they were on their way, the clerk informed the rest, that this adventure would prove a very beneficial one; for that they would be all entitled to their proportion of 80 l. for apprehending the robbers. occasioned a contention concerning the parts which they had feverally borne in taking them; one infifting he ought to have the greatest share; for he had first laid hands on

re

th

fo

pa

he

ha

tro

110

as

m

ra

an

ea

th

th

pe

pr

CU

Je

CO

W

Adams; another claming a superior part, for having first held the lanthorn to the man's face on the ground, by which he faid. the whole was discovered. The clerk claimed four fifths of the reward, for having proposed to fearch the prisoners; and likewise the carrying them before a justice: he faid, indeed. in strict justice, he ought to have the whole. These claims, however, they at last consented to refer to a future decision, but seemed all to agree that the clerk was entitled to a moiety. They then debated what money should be allotted to the young fellow, who had been employed only in holding the nets. He very modeftly faid that he did not apprehend any large proportion would fall to his share; but hoped they would allow him fomething: he defired them to confider that they had affigned their nets to his care, which prevented him from being as forward as any in laying hold of the robbers, (for fo these innocent people were called;) that if he had not occupied the nets, some other must: concluding, however, that he should be contented with the fmallest share imaginable, and should think that rather their bounty than his merit. But they were all unanimous in excluding him from any part whatever, the clerk particularly swearing, if they gave him a shilling, they might do what they pleased with the

I

art,

the

uid,

ned

fed

ar.

ed,

le.

ted

all

o a

ley

ho

ts.

·e-

nis

m

at

ch

in

0-

Ċ-

g,

k

t.

g

1-

16

Vol. I.

rest; for he would not concern himself with the affair. This contention was fo hot, and fo totally engaged the attention of all the parties, that a dextrous nimble thief, had he been in Mr Adams's fituation, would have taken care to have given the jultice no trouble that evening. Indeed, it required not the art of a shepherd to escape, especially as the darkness of the night would have so much befriended him; but Adams trufted rather to his innocence than his heels, and without thinking of flight, which was easy, or relitance (which was impossible, as there were fix lufty young fellows, befides the villain himself, present) he walked with perfect refignation the way they thought proper to conduct him.

Adams frequently vented himself in ejaculations during their journey; at last-poor Joseph Andrews occurring to his mind, he could not refrain sighing forth his name, which being heard by his companion in affliction, she cried, with some vehemence, Sure I should know that voice; you cannot certainly, Sir, be Mr Abraham Adams! Indeed, damsel, says he, that is my name; there is something also in your voice, which persuades me I have heard it before. La, Sir, says she, don't you remember poor Fanny? How, Fanny!

answered Adams, 'indeed I very well remember you; what can have brought you hither?" " I have told you, Sir,' replied she, " I was travelling towards London; but I thought ' you mentioned Joseph Andrews; pray what is become of him?' I left him, Child, this ' afternoon,' faid Adams, ' in the stagecoach, in his way towards our parish, whi-' ther he is going to fee you.' ' To fee me! ' la, Sir,' answered Fanny, ' sure you ' jeer me; what should he be going to see " me for ?" " Can you ask that?" replied Adams, 'I hope, Fanny, you are not inconstant; I assure you he deserves much better of you.' La! Mr Adams,' faid she, what is Mr Joseph to me? I am fure I nee ver had any thing to fay to him, but as one ' fellow-fervant might to another.' 'I am ' forry to hear this,' faid Adams; 'a virtuous paffion for a young man, is what no ' woman need be ashamed of. You either ' do not tell me truth, or you are false to a very worthy man.' Adams then told her what had happened at the inn, to which she listened very attentively; and a figh often escaped from her, notwithstanding her utmost endeavours to the contrary; nor could she prevent herfelf from asking a thousand queflions, which would have affured any one but Adams, who never faw farther into people

than they defired to let him, of the truth of a passion she endeavoured to conceal. Indeed, the fact was, that this poor girl having heard of Joseph's misfortune by some of the servants belonging to the coach, which we have formerly mentioned to have flopt at the ina while the poor youth was confined to his bed, that instant abandoned the cow she was milking, and taking with her a little bundle of clothes under her arm, and all the money she was worth in her own purfe, without confulting any one, immediately fet forward, in purfuit of one, whom, notwithstanding her shyness to the Parson, she loved with inexpresfible violence, though with the pureit and most delicate passion. This thyness, therefore, as we trust it will recommend her character to all 'our female readers, and not greatly furprize fuch of our males as are well acquainted with the younger part of the other fex, we shall not give ourselves any trouble to vindicate.

t

t

-

1

e

1

1

. 6

C H A P. XI.

What happened to them while before the Juflice. A chapter very full of learning.

HEIR fellow-travellers were fo engaged in the hot dispute concerning the division of the reward for apprehending

these innocent people, that they attended very little to their discourse. They were now arrived at the Justice's house, and had sent one of his servants in to acquaint his worship, that they had taken two robbers, and brought them before him. The Justice, who was just returned from a fox-chace, and had not yet finished his dinner, ordered them to carry the prisoners into the stable, whither they were attended by all the servants in the house, and all the people in the neighbourhood, who slocked together to see them with as much curiosity as if there was something uncommon to be seen, or that a rogue did not look like other people.

er

10

e

W

fh

ra W

k

al

W

V

in

The Justice now being in the height of his mirth and his cups, bethought himself of the prisoners, and telling his company he believed they should have good sport in their examination, he ordered them into his presence. They had no sooner entered the room, than he began to revile them, saying, that robberies on the highway were now grown so frequent, that people could not sleep safely in their beds, and assured them they both should be made examples of at the ensuing assizes. After he had gone on some time in this manner, he was reminded by his clerk, that it would be proper to take the depositions of the witnesses against them:

which he bid him do, and he would light his pipe in the mean time. Whilst the clerk was employed in writing down the deposition of the fellow who pretended he had been robbed, the Justice employed himself in cracking jests on poor Fanny, in which he was feconded by ail the company at table. One asked, whether she was to be indicted for a highwayman? Another whispered in her ear, if the had not provided herfelf a great belly, he was at her fervice. A third faid, he warranted she was a relation of Turpin. which one of the company, a great wit, shaking his head, and then his fides, answered, he believed she was nearer related to Turpis; at which there was an univerfal laugh. They were proceeding thus with the poor girl, when fomebody fmoaking the cassock peeping forth from under the great coat of Adams, cried out, 'What have we here? a ' parson?' ' How, firrah,' fays the justice, ' do you go robbing in the dress of a clergy-' man? let me tell you your habit will not entitle you to the benefit of the clergy.' ' Yes,' faid the witty fellow, ' he will have one benefit of clergy, he will be exalted above the heads of the people; at which there was a fecond laugh. And now the witty fpark feeing his jokes take, began to rife in spirits; and turning to Adams, chal-

lenged him to cap verses, and provoking him by giving the first blow, he repeated,

Molle meum levibus cord' est vilebile telis.

0

Upon which Adams, with a look full of ineffable contempt, told him he deserved scourging for his pronunciation. The witty fellow answered, 'What do you deserve,

- · Doctor, for not being able to answer the first time? Why, I'll give you one, you
- · blockhead—with an S.
 - · Si licet, ut fulvum spectatur in ignibus baurum.
 - ' What, can'ft not with an M neither?
- thou art a pretty fellow for a parfon---.
- · Why didft not iteal fome of the parson's
- ' Latin as well as his gown?' Another at the table then answered, ' If he had, you
- ' would have been too hard for him; I re-
- · member you at the college a very devil at
- ' this sport; I have seen you catch a fresh
- ' man: for nobody that knew you, would
- ' engage with you.' 'I have forgot these ' things now,' cried the wit. ' I believe I
- could have done pretty well formerly.-
- Let's fee, what did I end with—an M
- · again-ay-
 - Mars, Bacchus, Apollo, virorum.
- I could have done it once.' -- 'Ah! evil

JOSEPH ANDREWS. 247.

* betide you, and so you can now,' faid the other, ' nobody in this country will under-

' take you.' Adams could hold no longer;

' Friend,' said he, ' I have a boy not above

· eight years old, who would instruct thee,

that the last verse runs thus:

u

5

' Ut funt divorum, Mars, Bacchus, Apollo, virorum.

'I'll hold thee a guinea of that,' faid the wit, throwing the money on the table.—
'And I'll go your halves,' cries the other.
'Done,' answered Adams; but upon applying to his pocket, he was forced to retract, and own he had no money about him; which fet them all a-laughing, and confirmed the triumph of his advertary, which was not moderate, any more than the approbation he met with from the whole company, who told Adams, he must go a little longer to school, before he attempted to attack that gentleman in Latin.

The clerk having finished the depositions, as well of the fellow himself, as of those who apprehended the prisoners, delivered them to the Justice; who having sworn the several witnesses, without reading a syllable, ordered his clerk to make the mittimus.

Adams then faid, 'he hoped he should not be condemned unheard.' 'No, no,' cries

the Justice, 'you will be asked what you have to say for yourself, when you come on your trial: we are not trying you now; I shall only commit you to goal; if you can prove your innocence at Size, you will be found Ignoramus, and so no harm done.' Is it no punishment, Sir, for an innocent man to sy several months in goal?' cries Adams: 'I beg you would at least hear me before you sign the mittimus.' What signifies all you can say?' fays the Justice, 'is it not here in black and white against you? I must tell you, you are a very impertinent fellow, to take up so much of my time.--

' So make hafte with his mittimus.' The clerk now acquainted the juffice, that among other fuspicious things, as a penknife, &c. found in Adams's pocket, they had discovered a book written, as he apprehended, in cyphers: for no one could read a word in it. ' Aye,' fays the justice, ' the fellow may be " more than a common robber, he may be ' in a plot against the government-Produce ' the book.' Upon which the poor manufcript of Æschylus, which Adams had tranfcribed with his own hand, was brought forth; and the Justice looking at it shook his head, and turning to the prisoner asked the meaning of those cyphers. 'Cyphers!' answered Adams, ' it is a manuscript of AsOn

me

W:

can

ne.'

ent

ries

me

is

u?

int

- 3.0

lat

0-

in

it.

be

ae

ce

-5

1-

it

is

e

chylus.' Who? who?' faid the Justice. Adams repeated, 'Æschylus.' 'That is an outlandith name, cried the clerk. 'A fic-' titious name rather, I believe,' faid the Justice. One of the company declared it looked very much like Greek. 'Greek?' faid the Justice, ' why 'tis all writing.' ' No,' fays the other, ' I don't positively say it is so; for it is a very long time fince I have feen ' any Greek: there's one,' fays he, turning to the parson of the parish, who was present, ' will tell us immediately.' The parson taking up the book, and putting on his spectacles and gravity together, muttered fome words to himself, and then pronounced aloud --- 'Aye, indeed, it is a Greek manu-' fcript, a very fine piece of antiquity. I ' make no doubt but it was stolen from the ' fame clergyman from whom the rogue ' took the caffock.' 'What did the rascal ' mean by his Æschylus?' fays the Justice. ' Pooh!' answered the Doctor, with a contemptuous grin, 'do you think that fellow ' knows any thing of this book? Æschylus! ' ho! ho! I fee now what it is-a manu-' script of one of the fathers. I know a ' nobleman who would give a great deal of ' money for fuch a piece of antiquity. - Ay, ' ay, question and answer. The beginning is the catechism in Greek.—Ay, ay,

" Pollaki toi---What's your name?'--- Ay, what's your name?' fays the Justice to Adams, who answered, 'It is Æschylus, and I will maintain it.'--- O it is!' fays the Justice, 'make Mr Æschylus his mittimus. I will teach you to banter me with a false name.'

h

u

W

V

11

11

a

V

1

h

1

One of the company having looked ftedfastly at Adams, asked him, if he did not know Lady Booby? Upon which Adams, prefently calling him to mind, answered in a rapture, 'O Squire, are you there? I believe ' you will inform his Worship I am inno-' cent.' 'I can indeed fay,' replied the Squire, ' that I am very much furprifed to fee you ' in this fituation;' and then addressing himfelf to the Justice, he faid, 'Sir, I affure you · Mr Adams is a clergyman as he appears, ' and a gentleman of a very good character. I wish you would enquire a little farther ' into this affair; for I am convinced of his ' innocence.' ' Nay,' fays the Justice, 'if he is a gentleman, and you are fure he is ' innocent, I don't desire to commit him, not I: I will commit the woman by herielf, ' and take your bail for the gentleman; look ' into the book, clerk, and fee how it is to ' take bail: come---and make the mittimus ' for the woman as fast as you can.' 'Sir,' cries Adams, 'I affure you she is as innocent

JOSEPH ANDREWS. 251

y ,

to

nd

10

IS.

se s

1-

t

a

e

-

u

* as myfelf.' ' Perhaps,' faid the Squire, there may be fome mistake; pray let us bear Mr Adams's relation.' With all my ' heart,' answered the Justice, 'and give the gentleman a glass to wet his whistle before he begins. I know how to behave myfelf to a gentleman as well as another. Nobody can fay I have committed a gentleman, fince I have been in the commission.' Adams then began the narrative, in which, though he was very prolix, he was uninterrupted, unless by several hums and ha's of the Juflice, and his defire to repeat those parts which feemed to him the most material. When he had finished, the Justice, who, on what the Squire had faid, believed every fyllable of his story on his bare affirmation, notwithstanding the depositions on oath to the contrary, began to let loofe feveral rogues and rafcals against the witness, whom he ordered to stand forth, but in vain: the faid witness, long fince, finding what turn matters were like to take, had privily withdrawn, without attending the iffue. The Justice now flew into a violent passion, and was hardly prevailed with not to commit the innocent fellows, who had been imposed on as well as himfelf. He fwore, They had best find out the fellow who was guilty of perjury, and bring him before him within two

days, or he would bind them all over to their good behaviour. They all promifed to use their best endeavours to that purpose, and were dismissed. Then the Justice infisted, that Mr Adams, should fit down and take a glass with him; and the parson of the parish delivered him back the manuscript without faying a word; nor would Adams, who plainly discerned his ignorance, expose it. As for Fanny, the was, at her own request, recommended to the care of a maidfervant of the house, who helped her to new-

drefs, and clean herfelf.

The company in the parlour had not been long feated, before they were alarmed with a horrible uproar from without, where the persons who had apprehended Adams and Fanny, had been regaling, according to the custom of the house, with the Justice's strong beer. These were all fallen together by the ears, and were cuffing each other without any mercy. The Justice himself fallied out, and, with the dignity of his prefence, foon put an end to the fray. On his return into the parlour, he reported, That the occasion of the quarrel was no other than a dispute, to whom, if Adams had been convicted, the greater share of the reward for apprehending him had belonged. All the company laughed at this, except Adams, who, taking

his pipe from his mouth, fetched a deep groan, and faid, he was concerred to fee fo litigious a temper in men: that he remembered a story something like it in one of the parishes where his cure lay: 'There was,' continued he, 'a competition between three young fellows for the place of the clerk, which I disposed of to the best of my abi-' lities, according to merit: that is, I gave it to him who had the happiest knack at fetting a pfalm. The clerk was no fooner established in his place, than a contention began between the two disappointed can-' didates concerning their excellence, each ' contending, on whom, had they two been the only competitors, my election would have fallen. This dispute frequently dif-'turbed the congregation, and introduced ' a discord into the psalmody, till I was ' forced to filence them both. But alas, ' the litigious spirit could not be stifled; and being no longer able to vent itself in fing-' ing, it now broke forth in fighting. oproduced many battles, (for they were very ' near a match;) and, I believe, would have ' ended fatally, had not the death of the ' clerk given me an opportunity to promote one of them to his place; which presently ' put an end to the dispute, and entirely re-* conciled the contending parties.' Adams

ns, ofe reid-

ieir use

ind

ed,

ake the

een ith

the ind the

ing the

ut,

on

ion

the id-

ny

in

21

W

fe

CE

h

0

tl

then proceeded to make fome philosophical observation, on the folly of growing warm in disputes, in which neither party is interested. He then applied himself vigorously to smoaking; and a long filence ensued, which was at length broke by the Justice: who began to fing forth his own praises, and to value himself exceedingly on his nice difcernment in the cause which had lately been before him. He was quickly interrupted by Mr Adams, between whom and his Worship a dispute now arose, whether he ought not. in strictness of law, to have committed him, the faid Adams; in which the latter maintained he ought to have been committed, and the Juffice as vehemently held he ought This had most probably produced a quarrel, (for both were very violent and pofitive in their opinions), had not Fanny accidentally heard, that a young fellow was going from the Justice's house to the very inn where the stage-coach, in which Joseph was, put up. Upon this news, she immediately fent for the Parson out of the parlour. Adams, when he found her resolute to go, (though she would not own the reafon, but pretended she could not bear to see the faces of those who had suspected her of fuch a crime) was as fully determined to go with her; he accordingly took leave of the

Justice and company, and so ended a dispute in which the law seemed shamefully to intend to set a magistrate and a divine together by the ears.

cal

rm

te-

fly

ed,

nd

if-

en by

ip

n,

11-

d,

ht

a)-

c-

15

h

-

.

e

-

e

f

0

C H A P. XII.

A very delightful adventure, as well to the perfons concerned, as to the good-natured reader.

A DAMS, Fanny, and the guide, set out together, about one in the morning, the moon being just then risen. They had not gone above a mile before a most violent storm of rain obliged them to take shelter in an inn, or rather alehouse; where Adams immediately procured himself a good sire, a toast and ale, and a pipe, and began to smoke with great content, utterly forgetting every thing that had happened.

Fanny likewise sat down by the fire; but was much more impatient at the storm. She presently engaged the eyes of the host, his wise, the maid of the house, and the young sellow who was their guide; they all conceived they had never seen any thing half so handsome: and indeed, Reader, if thou art of an amorous hue, I advise you to skip over the next paragraph: which, to render our history perfect, we are obliged to set down, humbly hoping, that we may escape the sate

of Pygmalion: for if it should happen to us or to thee to be struck with this picture, we should be perhaps in as helpless a condition as Narcissus; and might say to ourselves, quod petis est nusquam. Or, if the finest scatures in it should set Lady——'s image before our eyes, we should be still in as bad a situation, and might say to our desires, Cx-

lam ipfum petimus stultitia.

Fanny was now in the nineteenth year of her age; she was tall and delicately shaped; but not one of those slender young women, who feem rather intended to hang up in the hall of an anatomist, than for any other purpose. On the contrary, she was so plump, that she seemed bursting through her tight stays, especially in the part which confined her fwelling breafts. Nor did her hips want the affiftance of a hoop to extend them. The exact shape of her arms denoted the form of those limbs which she concealed; and though they were a little reddened by her labour, yet, if her fleeve flipped above her elbow, or her handkerchief discovered any part of her neck, a whiteness appeared which the finest Italian paint would be unable to reach. Her hair was of a chefnut brown, and Nature had been extremely lavish to her of it, which she had cut, and on Sundays used to curl down her neck in the modern fashion. Her

h

V

a

C

te

metaphyfical rubbish to erect and support: for our part, we give it clearly on the fide of Joseph, whose happiness was not only greater than the Parson's, but of longer duration: for as foon as the first tumults of Adams's rapture were over, he cast his eyes towards the fire, where Æschylus lay expiring; and immediately refcued the poor remains, to wit, the fheep-skin covering of his dear friend, which was the work of his own hands, and had been his inseparable compa-

nion for upwards of thirty years.

us

we

on

es,

a-

ge

la

r-

of

d;

n, ic

rp,

t

d nt

10 f

h r,

r

er ft

r e

h 1

Fanny had no fooner perfectly recovered herfelf, than the began to restrain the impetuofity of her transports; and reflecting on what she had done and suffered in the prefence of fo many, the was immediately covered with confusion; and pushing Joseph gently from her, the begged him to be quiet: nor would admit of either kifs or embrace any longer. Then feeing Mrs Slipflop, the curt'fied, and offered to advance to her; but that high woman would not return her curt'lies; but calting her eyes another way, immediately withdrew into another room, muttering as the went, the wondered who the creature was.

C H A P. XIII.

A dissertation concerning high people and low people, with Mrs Slipslop's departure in no very good temper of mind, and the evil plight in which she left Adams and his company.

T will doubtless seem extremely odd to I many readers, that Mrs Slipflop, who had lived feveral years in the same house with Fanny, should in a short separation utterly forget her. And indeed the truth is, that the remembered her very well. As we would not willingly therefore, that any thing should appear unnatural in this our history, we will endeavour to explain the reasons of her conduct; nor do we doubt being able to fatisfy the most curious reader, that Mrs Slipflop did not in the least deviate from the common road in this behaviour; and indeed, had she done otherwise, she must have defcended below herfelf, and would have very justly been liable to censure.

Be it known then, that the human species are divided into two sorts of people, to wit, High people and Low people. As by high people, I would not be understood to mean persons literally born higher in their dimensions than the rest of the species, nor metaphorically those of exalted character or abi-

20

O

0

.

s,

e

f

0

S

Y

lities; so by low people I cannot be construed to intend the reverfe. High people fignify no other than people of fashion, and low people those of no fashion. Now this word falhion hath by long use lost its original meaning, from which at prefent it gives us a very different idea: for I am deceived, if by persons of fashion we do not generally include a conception of birth and accomplishments superior to the herd of mankind; whereas, in reality, nothing more was originally meant by a person of fashion, than a person who dressed himself in the fashion of the times; and the word really and truly fignifies no more at this day. Now the world being thus divided into people of fashion, and people of no fashion, a fierce contention arose between them; nor would those of one party, to avoid fuspicion, be seen publicly to speak to those of the other, though they often held a very good correspondence in private. In this contention, it is difficult to fay which party fucceeded: for whilft the people of fashion seized several places to their own use, fuch as courts, affemblies, operas, balls, &c.; the people of no fashion, besides one royal place, called his majesty's bear-garden, have been in constant possession of all hops, fairs, revels, &c. Two places have been agreed to be divided between them, namely the church

and the play-house; where they segregate themselves from each other in a remarkable manner: for as the people of fashion exalt themselves at church over the heads of the people of no fashion, so in the play-house they abase themselves in the same degree under their feet. This distinction I have never met with any one able to account for: it is Jufficient, that so far from looking on each other as brethren in the Christian language, they feem fearce to regard each other as of the fame species. This the terms, " strange " persons, people one does not know, the " creature, wretches, beafts, brutes," and many other appellations, evidently demonstrate; which Mrs Slipslop having often heard her mistress use, thought she had also a right to use, in her turn: and, perhaps she was not mistaken; for these two parties, especially those bordering nearly on each other, to wit, the lowest of the high, and the highest of the low, often change their parties according to place and time; for those who are people of fashion in one place, are often people of no fashion in another. And with regard to time, it may not be unpleasant to survey the picture of dependance like a kind of ladder: as for instance; early in the morning arises the postilion, or some other boy, which great families, no more than great ships, are withrate

ible

xalt the

use

un-

ver t is

ich

ge, of

ige

the nd

n-

ht

ot

lly

it,

of

ng

le

of

to

he

r:

es

at

1.

out, and falls to brushing the clothes, and cleaning the shoes of John the footman, who being dreffed himfelf, applies his hand to the fame labours for Mr Second-hand, the fquire's gentleman; the gentleman, in the like manner, a little later in the day, attends the fquire; the fquire is no fooner equipped, than he attends the levee of my lord; which is no fooner over, than my lord himself is feen at the levee of the favourite; who, after the hour of homage is at an end, appears himfelf to pay homage to the levee of his fovereign. Nor is there perhaps, in this whole ladder of dependance, any one step at a greater distance from the other, than the first from the second: fo that to a philotopher the question might only feem, whether you would chuse to be a great man at fix in the morning, or at two in the afternoon. And yet there are scarce two of these, who do not think the least familiarity with perfons below them a condefcenfion, and, if they were to go one ftep farther, a degradation.

And now, reader, I hope thou wilt pardon this long digression, which seemed to me necessary to vindicate the great character of Mrs Slipslop, from what low people, who have never seen high people, might think an absurdity; but we who know them, must have daily found very high persons know us

Vol. I. Z

in one place and not in another, to-day, and not to-morrow; all which it is difficult to account for, otherwise than I have here endeavoured; and perhaps if the gods, according to the opinion of some, made men only to laugh at them, there is no part of our behaviour which answers the end of our creation better than this.

W

tl

h

0

1

tion better than this. But to return to our history: Adams, who knew no more of this than the cat which fat on the table, imagining Mrs Slipflop's memory had been much worse than it really was, followed her into the next room crying out, 'Madam Slipflop, here is one of ' your old acquaintance: do but fee what a fine woman the is grown fince the left Lady
Booby's fervice. I think I reflect fome-' thing of her,' answered she with great dignity, 'but I can't remember all the inferior fervants in our family.' She then proceeded to fatisfy Adams's curiofity, by telling him, when the arrived at the inn, the found a chaife ready for her; that her lady being expected very shortly in the country, the was obliged to make the utmost haste, and ' in commensuration of Joseph's lameness, If the had taken him with her; and laftly, ' that the excessive virulence of the storm had driven them into the house where he found them.' After which, the acquainted Adams

JOSEPH ANDREWS. 267

with his having left his horse, and expressed fome wonder at his having strayed so far out of his way, and at meeting him, as she said, in the company of that wench, who she seared was no better than she should be.'

16

to

n-

d-

ly

e-

2-

ıs,

ch

's

ly

-

of

a

y

ľ

1

The horse was no sooner put into Adams's head, but he was immediately driven out by this reflection on the character of Fanny. He protested, ' he believed there was not a chafter damfel in the universe. I heartily ' wish, I heartily wish,' cried he, (fnapping his fingers), ' that all her betters were as ' good.' He then proceeded to inform her of the accident of their meeting; but when he came to mention the circumstance of delivering her from the rape, the fuld, the thought him properer for the army than the clergy: that it did not become a clergyman to lay violent hands on any one; that he should have rather prayed that she might be strengthened. Adams faid, He was very far from being ashamed of what he had done: the replied, Want of thame was not the currycuriftic of a clergyman. This dialogue might have probably grown warmer, had not Joseph opportunely entered the room, to ask leave of Madam Slipslop to introduce Fanny: but she positively refused to admit any fuch trollops; and told him, She would have been burnt, before the would have fuf-

f

1

fered him to get into the chaife with her, if the had once respected him of having his fluts waylaid on the road for him; adding, that Mr Adams acted a very pretty part, and she did not doubt but to fee him a bishop. made the best bow he could, and cried out, 'I thank you, Madam, for that right reverend ' appellation, which I thall take all honest " means to deferve.' ' Very honest means,' returned she with a fneer, 'to bring good ' people together.' At these words Adams took two or three strides across the room, when the coachman came to inform Mrs Slipflop, That the form was over, and the moon shone very bright. She then fent for Joseph, who was fitting without with his Fanny, and would have had him gone with her: but he peremptorily refused to leave Fanny behind; which threw the good woman into a violent rage. She faid, She would inform her Lady what doings were carrying on, and did not doubt but she would rid the parish of all such people; and concluded a long speech full of bitterness and very hard words, with fome reflections on the clergy, not decent to repeat: at last, finding Joseph unmoveable, she flung herself into the chaife, casting a look at Fanny as she went, not unlike that which Cleopatra gives Octavia in the play. To fay the truth, she

was most disagreeably disappointed by the presence of Fanny; she had, from her first seeing Joseph at the inn, conceived hopes of something which might have been accomplished at an alchouse as well as a palace. Indeed, it is probable Mr Adams had rescued more than Fanny from the danger of a rape

that evening.

if

its

at

he

le

t,

d

R

,,

d

15

1,

e

r

S

e

When the chaife had carried off the enraged Slipflop, Adams, Joseph, and Fanny assembled over the fire; where they had a great deal of innocent chat, pretty enough; but as possibly it would not be very entertaining to the reader, we shall hasten to the morning; only observing, that none of them went to bed that night. Adams, when he had smoaked three pipes, took a comfortable nap in a great chair, and left the lovers, whose eyes were too well employed to permit any defire of thutting them, to enjoy by themselves, during some hours, an happiness which none of my readers who have never been in love, are capable of the least conception of, though we had as many tongues as Homer defired to describe it with, and which all true lovers will represent to their own minds without the least affistance from us.

Let it suffice then to say, that Fanny, after a thousand entreaties, at last gave up her

th

V

C

t

whole foul to Joseph, and almost fainting in his arms, with a figh infinitely fofter and fweeter too than an Arabian breeze, flie whifpered to his lips, which were then close to hers, 'O Joseph, you have won me: I will be yours for ever.' Joseph having thanked her on his knees, and embraced her with an eagerness which she now almost returned, leaped up in a rapture, and awakened the Parson, earnestly begging him, that he would that instant join their hands together. Adams rebuked him for his request, and told him, He would by no means confent to any thing contrary to the forms of the church: that he had no licence, nor indeed would he advise him to obtain one. That the church had prescribed a form, namely, the publication of banns, with which all good Christians ought to comply, and to the omission of which he attributed the many miseries which befel great folks in marriage; concluding, ' As many as are joined together otherwife than God's word doth allow, ' are not joined together by God, neither is ' their matrimony lawful.' Fanny agreed with the Parson, saying to Joseph with a blush, She affured him the would not confent to any fuch thing, and wondered at his offering it. In which refolution the was comforted, and commended by Adams, and Jofeph was obliged to wait patiently till after the third publication of the banns, which however he obtained the confent of Fanny, in the presence of Adams, to put in at their arrival.

ie ie I

er

2-

1-

-

The fun had been now rifen fome hours, when Joseph, finding his leg furprisingly recovered, proposed to walk forwards; but when they were all ready to set out, an accident a little retarded them. This was no other than the reckoning, which amounted to seven shillings; no great sum, if we consider the immense quantity of ale which Mr Adams poured in. Indeed they had no objection to the reasonableness of the bill, but many to the probability of paying it; for the fellow who had taken poor Fanny's purse, had unluckily forgot to return it. So that the account stood thus:

Mr Adams and compar	y, Dr	•	0	7	0
In Mr Adams's pocket,			0	0	61/2
In Mr Joseph's, -	•	-	0	0	0
In Mrs Fanny's, -	•	-	0	0	0
Balance,	-	-	0	6	5 2

They stood filent some few minutes, staring at each other, when Adams whipt out on his toes, and asked the hostess, If there was no

to

m

al

n

tl

0

n

a

lob

li

0

a

V

h

C

T

C

Clergyman in that parish? She answered, There was. 'Is he wealthy?' replied he; to which she likewise answered in the affirmative. Adams then snapping his singers, returned overjoyed to his companions, crying out, 'Heureka, Heureka;' which not being understood, he told them in plain English, they need give themsel es no trouble; for he had a brother in the parish, who would defray the reckoning, and that he would just step to his house and fetch the money, and return to them instantly.

C H A P. XIV.

An interview between parfon Adams and parfon Trulliber.

Parson Trulliber, whom he found stript into his waist-coat, with an apron on, and a pail in his hand just come from serving his hogs: for Mr Trulliber was a parson on Sundays, but all the other six might more properly be called a farmer. He occupied a small piece of land of his own, besides which he rented a considerable deal more. His wife milked his cows, managed his dairy, and sollowed the markets with butter and eggs. The hogs fell chiefly to his care, which he carefully waited on at home, and attended

to fairs; on which occasion he was liable to many jokes, his own fize being with much ale rendered little inferior to that of the beasts he fold. He was indeed one of the largest men you should see, and could have acted the part of Sir John Falstaff without stuffing. Add to this, that the rotundity of his belly was considerably increased by the shortness of his stature, his shadow ascending very near as far in height when he lay on his back as when he stood on his legs. His voice was loud and hoarse, and his accent extremely broad: to complete the whole, he had a stateliness in his gait, when he walked, not unlike that of a goose, only he stalked slower.

r-

S,

y -

ot r-

;

0

e.

Mr Trulliber being informed that fomebody wanted to fpeak with him, immediately flipt off his apron, and clothed himself in an old night-gown, being the drefs in which he always faw his company at home. His wife, who informed him of Mr Adams's arrival, had made a small mistake; for she had told her husband, She believed here was a man come for some of his hogs. This supposition made Mr Trulliber haften with the utmost expedition to attend his guest. He no sooner saw Adams, than not in the least doubting the cause of his errand to be what his wife had imagined, he told him, he was come in very good time: that he expected a

h

V

dealer that very afternoon; and added, they were all pure and fat, and upwards of 20 fcore a-piece. Adams answered, he believed he did not know him. 'Yes, yes,' cried Trulliber, ' I have feen you often at ' fair; why we have dealt before now, mun, "I warrant you; yes yes,' cries he, 'I re-· member thy face very well, but won't ' mention a word more till you have feen ' them, tho' I have never fold thee a flitch of fuch beacon as is now in the ftye.' Upon which he laid violent hands on Adams, and dragged him into the hogs-flye, which was indeed but two steps from his parlour-window. They were no fooner arrived there than he cry'd out, ' Do but handle them; step in, friend, art welcome to handle them whether dost buy them or no.' At which words opening the gate, he pushed Adams into the pig-flye, infifting on it, that he should handle them, before he would talk one word with him. Adams, whose natural complaifance was beyond any artificial, was obliged to comply before he was fuffered to explain himfelf; and laying hold on one of their tails, the unruly beaft gave fuch a fudden fpring, that he threw poor Adams all along in the mire. Trulliber, instead of affifting him to get up, burst into a laughter, and entering the flye, faid to Adams, with

,

it

1,

t

n

h

nd

S

e,

1

S

5

1

)

f

-

fome contempt, Why, doft not know how ' to handle a hog?' and was going to lay hold of one himfelf; but Adams, who thought he had carried his complaifance far enough, was no fooner on his legs, than he escaped out of the reach of the animals, and cried out, ' Nihil habeo cum porcis: I am a clergy-' man, Sir, and am not come to buy hogs.' Trulliber answered, ' he was forry for the ' mistake; but that he must blame his wife;' adding, ' she was a fool, and always com-' mitted blunders.' He then defired him to walk in and clean himfelf; that he would only fasten up the stye and follow him. Adams defired leave to dry his great coat, wig and hat by the fire, which Trulliber granted. Mrs Trulliber would have brought him a bason of water to wash his face; but her husband bid her be quiet, like a fool as fhe was, or the would commit more blunders, and then die cled Adams to the pump. While Adams was thus employed, I rulliber, who had conceived no great respect for the appearance of his guest, fastened the parlour door, and now conducted him into the kitchen; telling him, he believed a cup of drink would do him no harm, and whifpered his wife to draw a little of the worlt ale. After a short silence, Adams faid, 'I fancy, Sir, you already perceive me

b

fc

W

fh

o; th

01

re

ha

10

pa

re

ab

he

hi

We

exa

it (

· V

der

to be a clergyman.' 'Ay, ay,' cries Trulliber grinning; ' I perceive you have fome ' cassock; I will not venture to call it a ' whole one.' Adams answered, ' It was ' indeed none of the best; but he had the ' misfortune to tear it about ten years ago ' in passing over a stile.' Mrs Trulliber returning with the drink, told her hufband. ' she fancied the gentleman was a traveller, and that he would be glad to eat a bit.' Trulliber bid her hold her impertinent tongue; and asked her, if parsons used to travel without horses? adding, he supposed the gentleman had none by his having no boots on. ' Yes, Sir, yes,' fays Adams, 'I have a horse, but I left him behind me.' 'I am glad to hear you have one, fays Trulliber; for I affure you I don't love to fee clergy-' men on foot; it is not feemly, nor fuiting the dignity of the cloth.' Here Trulliber made a long oration on the dignity of the cloth (or rather gown) not much worth relating, till his wife had fpread the table and fet a mess of porridge on it for his breakfast. He then faid to Adams, 'I don't know, friend, how you came to caale on me; · however, as you are here, if you think proe per to eat a morfel you may.' Adams accepted the invitation, and the two partons fat down together, Mrs Trulliber waiting

11-

ne

as

he

go

·e-

id,

er,

t.

10;

1-

e-

n.

ſe,

ad

r;

y -

ng

er

he

e-

nd

At.

W,

e;

0-

C-

ns

g

behind her husband's chair, as was, it seems, her custom. Trulliber ate heartily, but fearce put any thing in his mouth without finding fault with his wife's cookery. which the poor woman bore patiently. Indeed the was to absolute an admirer of her husband's greatness and importance, of which the had frequent hints from his own mouth, that she almost carried her adoration to an opinion of his infallibility. To fay the truth, the parson had exercised her more ways than one; and the pious woman had fo well edified by her husband's fermons, that she had refolved to receive the bad things of this world together with the good. She had indeed been at first a little contentious; but he had long fince got the better, partly by her love for this, partly by her fear for that, partly by her religion, partly by the respect he paid himfelf, and partly by that which he received from the parith; she had, in short, absolutely submitted, and now worshipped her husband as Sarah did Abraham, calling him (not lord, but) master. Whilst they were at table, her husband gave her a fresh example of his greatness; for as she had just delivered a cup of ale to Adams, he fnatched it out of his hand, and crying out, 'I caal'd 'vurst,' swallowed down the ale. Adams denied it; it was referred to the wife, who, VOL. I. Aa

though her conscience was on the side of Adams, durst not give it against her husband. Upon which he said, 'No, Sir, no, I should not have been so rude as to have taken it from you, if you had caal'd vurst; but I'd have you know I'm a better man than to fusser the best he in the kingdom to drink before me in my own house, when I caale vurst.'

As foon as their breakfast was ended, Adams began in the following manner: ' I think, Sir, it is high time to inform you of the bufiness of my embassy. I am a traveller, and am paffing this way in com-· pany with two young people, a lad and a damfel, my parishioners, towards my own · cure; we flopt at a house of hospitality in the parish, where they directed me to you, · as having the cure. - Though I am but a curate,' fays Trulliber, ' I believe I am as warm as the vicar himself, or perhaps the rector of the next parish too; I believe " I could buy them both.' 'Sir,' cries Adams, 'I rejoice thereat. Now, Sir, my · bufiness is, that we are by various accidents fript of our money, and are not able to pay our reckoning, being feven shillings. I therefore requelt you to affift me with the loan of those feven shillings, and also · feven shillings more, which peradventure I

JOSEPH ANDREWS. 279

fhall return to you; but if not, I am convinced you will joyfully embrace fuch an

opportunity of laying up a treasure in a

better place than any this world affords.' Suppose a stranger who entered the chambers of a lawyer, being imagined a client, when the lawyer was preparing his palmfor the fee, should pull out a writ against him. Suppose an apothecary, at the door of a chariet containing fome great doctor of emineat skill, should, instead of directions to a patient, prefent him with a potion for himself. Suppose a minister should, instead of a good round fum, treat my Lord —, or Sir —, or Efq; — with a good broomstick. Suppose a civil companion, or a led captain should, instead of virtue, and honour, and beauty, and parts, and admiration, thunder vice, and infamy, and ugliness, and folly, and contempt in his patron's ears. Suppose, when a tradesman first carries in his bill, the man of fashion should pay it; or suppose, if he did so, the tradefman should abate what he had overcharged on the fupposition of waiting. fhort,-fuppose what you will, you never can, nor will suppose any thing equal to the astonishment which seized on Trulliber, as soon as Adams had ended his speech. A while he rolled his eyes in filence, fometimes furveying Adams, then his wife, then calting them on

Aaz

of nd. uld n it

I'd to ink ale

Aof
ramd a
wn

ou, out am aps

in

A-my nts to 25.

ith lio e I

the ground, then lifting them up to heaven. At last he burst forth in the following accents, · Sir, I believe I know where to lay up my little treasure as well as another; I thank Gon, if I am not fo warm as some, I am content; that is a bleffing greater than riches; and he to whom that is given need ask no more. To be content with a little is greater than to possess the world, which ' man may possess without being so. Lay ' up my treasure! what matters where a man's treasure is, whose heart is in the ' scriptures? there is the treasure of a Chris-' tian.' At these words the water ran from Adams's eyes; and catching Trulliber by the hand in a rapture, 'Brother,' fays he, · Heaven bless the accident by which I came · to fee you; I would have walked many a · mile to have communed with you; and be-· lieve me, I will thortly pay you a second vifit: but my friends, I fancy, by this time, · wonder at my flay; so let me have the mo-' ney immediately.' Trulliber then put on a stern look, and cried out, 'Thou dost not in-' tend to rob me?' At which the wife bursting into tears, fell on her knees, and roared out, 'O dear Sir, for Heaven's fake don't ' rob my master, we are but poor people.' · Get up for a fool as thou art, and go about thy business, faid Trulliber, dost think

the man will venture his life? he is a beggar, and no robber.' Very true indeed,' answered Adams. 'I wish, with all my heart, the tithing man was here,' cries Trulliber, I would have thee punished as a vagabond for thy impudence. Fourteen shillings indeed? I wont give thee a farthing. I be? lieve thou art no more a clergyman than the woman there, (pointing to his wife;) but if thou art, dost deserve to have thy gown stript over thy shoulders, for running about the country in fuch a manner.' 'I · forgive your fuspicions,' fays Adams; 'but ' fuppose I am not a clergyman, I am nevertheless thy brother; and thou as a Christian, much more as a clergyman, art obliged ' to relieve my distress.' 'Dost preach to me?' replied Trulliber, 'dost pretend to instruct " me in my duty?" 'Ifacks, a good story, cries Mrs Trulliber, ' to preach to my ma-'ster.' 'Silence, woman,' cries Trulliber, I would have thee know, friend,' (addreffing himself to Adams,) 'I shall not learn my duty from such as thee; I know what charity is, better than to give it to vagabonds. Besides, if we were inclined, the poor's rate obliges us to give fo much charity,' cries the wife. 'Pugh! thou art a fool. Poor's rate! hold thy nonfenfe,' answered Trulliber: and then, turning to Adams, he told

him, 'he would give him nothing.' 'I am · forry,' answered Adams, ' that you do · know what charity is, fince you practife it ono better; I must tell you if you trust to vour knowledge for your justification, you will find yourfelf deceived, the' you should addfaith to it without good works.' Fellow,' cries Trulliber, 'dolt thou speak against faith • in my house? Get out of my doors, I will no · longer remain under the fame roof with a wretch who fpeaks wantonly of faith and the Scriptures.' Name not the Scriptures,' fays Adams. ' How, not name the · Scriptures! Do you disbelieve the Scrip-' tures?' cries Trulliber. ' No, but you do, answered Adams, if I may reason from your practice: for their commands are fo explicit, and their rewards and pu-* nishments so immense, that it is impossible a man should stedfastly believe without obeying. Now, there is no command more express, no duty more frequently enjoined than charity. Whoever therefore is void of charity, I make no fcruple of pronoun-' cing that he is no Christian.' 'I would onot advise thee,' fays Trulliber, 'to fay that I am no Christian; I won't take it of you; for I believe I am as good a man * as thyself:' (and indeed, though he was now rather too corpulent for athletic exer-

b a fe h

C

h g w ec

A

ge ab

bo de.

fue ly. cises, he had in his youth been one of the best boxers and cudgel-players in the country.) His wife, seeing him clench his sist, interposed, and begged him not to sight, but shew himself a true Christian, and take the law of him. As nothing could provoke Adams to strike, but an absolute assault on himself or his friend, he smiled at the angry look and gestures of Trulliber; and telling him, he was forry to see such men in orders, departed without further ceremony.

C H A P. XV.

An adventure, the consequence of a new instance which Parson Adams gave of his forgetful-ness.

WHEN he came back to the inn, he found Joseph and Fanny sitting together. They were so far from thinking his absence long, as he had seared they would, that they never once missed or thought of him. Indeed I have been often assured by both, that they spent these hours in a most delightful conversation; but as I never could prevail on either to relate it, so I cannot communicate it to the reader.

Adams acquainted the lovers with the ill fuccess of his enterprise. They were all greatly confounded, none being able to propose

any method of departing: till Joseph at last advised calling in the hostes, and desiring her to trust them; which Fanny said she despaired of her doing, as she was one of the sourest-faced women she had ever beheld.

CO

no

he

the

nic

cia

rai

ged

tha

hig

pa

for

no

ver

2 1

tho

the

as !

ed

kne

mo

and

no

1

But the was agreeably disappointed; for the hostess was no fooner asked the question than she readily agreed; and, with a curtfy and fmile, wished them a good journey. However, left Fanny's skill in physiognomy. should be called in question, we will venture to assign one reason, which might probably incline her to this confidence and good humour. When Adams faid he was going to visit his brother, he had unwittingly imposed on Joseph and Fanny; who both believed he had meant his natural brother, and not his brother in divinity; and had fo informed the hostess on her enquiry after him. Now Mr Trulliber had, by his professions of piety, by his gravity, austerity, referve, and opinion of his great wealth, fo great an authority in his parish, that they all lived in the utmost fear and apprehension of him. It was therefore no wonder that the hostes, who knew it was in his option whether the should ever fell another mug of drink, did not dare to affront his supposed brother by denying him credit.

They were now just on their departure,

when Adams recollected he had left his great coat and hat at Mr Trulliber's. As he was not defirous of renewing his visit, the hostes herself, having no servant at home, offered to fetch it.

This was an unfortunate expedient; for the hostess was soon undeceived in the opinion she had entertained of Adams, whom Trulliber abused in the grossest terms, especially when he heard he had had the assurance to pretend to be his near relation.

At her return, therefore, she entirely changed her note. She said, Folks might be assumed of travelling about, and pretending to be what they were not: that taxes were high, and for her part, she was obliged to pay for what she had; she could not therefore possibly, nor would she trust any body, no not her own father: that money was never scarcer, and she wanted to make up a sum. That she expected therefore they should pay their reckoning before they left the house.

Adams was now greatly perplexed: but as he knew that he could eafily have borrowed fuch a fum in his own parish, and as he knew he would have lent it himself to any mortal in diffress, so he took fresh courage, and sallied out all round the parish, but to no purpose; he returned as pennyless as he

went, groaning and lamenting, that it was possible, in a country professing Christianity, for a wretch to starve in the midst of his fellow creatures who abounded.

Whilst he was gone, the hostess, who stayed as a fort of guard with Joseph and Fanny, entertained them with the goodness of Parfon Trulliber. And indeed he had not only a very good character, as to other qualities, in the neighbourhood, but was reputed a man of great charity: for though he never gave a farthing, he had always that word in his mouth.

Adams was no fooner returned the fecond time, than the storm grew exceeding high, the hosters declaring among other things, that if they offered to stir without paying her, she would foon overtake them with a warrant.

Plato and Aristotle, or somebody else hath faid, That when the most exquisite EUNNING FAILS, CHANCE OFTEN HITS THE MARK, AND THAT BY MEANS THE LEAST EXPECTED. Virgil expresses this very boldly:

Turne, quod optanti divum promittere nemo Auderet volvenda dies, en! attulit ultro.

I would quote more great men if I could: but my memory not permitting me, I will

pr

nii

in me no ma co an the infi it that

do thu gay at the

wh

Ad

obf is f Ad him he

the

JOSEPH ANDREWS. 287

proceed to exemplify these observations by

the following instance.

1

E

There chanced (for Adams had not cunning enough to contrive it) to be at that time in the alehouse, a fellow, who had been formerly a drummer in an Irith regiment, and now travelled the country as a pedlar. This man having attentively listened to the discourse of the hostess, at last took Adams aside, and asked him what the sum was for which they were detained. As foon as he was informed, he fighed, and faid, He was forry it was fo much: for that he had no more than fix shillings and fixpence in his pocket, which he would lend them with all his heart. Adams gave a caper, and cried out, It would do: for that he had fixpence himself. And thus these poor people, who could not engage the compassion of riches and piety, were at length delivered out of their diffress by the charity of a poor pedlar.

I shall refer it to my reader to make what observations he pleases on this incident; it is sufficient for me to inform him, that after Adams and his companions had returned him a thousand thanks, and told him where he might call to be repaid, they all sallied out of the house without any compliments from their hostess, or indeed without paying her any; Adams declaring, he would take parti-

oular care never to call there again, and she, on her side, assuring them she wanted no such guests.

C H A P. XVI.

Avery curious adventure, in which Mr Adams gave a much greater instance of the honest simplicity of his heart than of his experience in the ways of this world.

Ph

te

re

th

fo

W

of

gi

tra

nit

at

rif

the

and

he

UR travellers had walked about two miles from that inn, which they had more reason to have mistaken for a castle, than Don Quixote ever had any of those in which he folourned, feeing they had met with fuch difficulty in escaping out of its walls; when they came to a parish, and beheld a fign of invitation hanging out. A gentleman fat fmoaking a pipe at the door; of whom Adams enquired the road, and received fo courteous and obliging an answer, accompanied with fo fmiling a countenance, that the good Parson, whose heart was natutally disposed to love and affection, began to ask several other questions; particularly the name of the parish, and who was the owner of a large house whose front they had then in profpect. The gentleman answered as obligingly as before; and as to the house, acquainted him it was his own. He then proceeded in

The gentleman expressed great delight in the hearty and chearful behaviour of Adams; and particularly in the familiarity with which he conversed with Joseph and Fanny, whom

Vol. I. B b

he often called his children, a term he explained to mean no more than his parithioners; faying, he looked on all those whom God had entrusted to his cure, to stand to him in that relation. The gentleman, shaking him by the hand, highly applauded those fentiments. 'They are indeed,' fays he, 'the true principles of a · Christian divine; and I heartily wish they ' were univerfal: but on the contrary, I am forry to fay, the parfon of our parish, in-· flead of esteeming his poor parishioners as ' a part of his family, feems rather to con-· fider them as not of the fame species with himself. He seldom speaks to any, unless ' fome few of the richest of us: nav, indeed. he will not move his hat to the others. I often laugh, when I behold him on Sundays strutting along the church-yard like a turkey-cock, through rows of his pari-' fhioners; who bow to him with as much fubmission, and are as unregarded as a set of fervile courtiers by the proudest prince ' in Christendom. But if such temporal · pride is ridiculous, furely the spiritual is odious and detestable: if fuch a puffed up empty human bladder strutting in princely robes, just moves one's derision; furely in the habit of a priest it must raise our scorn. ' Doubtless,' answered Adams, ' your

opinion is right; but I hope fuch examples are rare. The clergy whom I have the honour to know, maintain a different behaviour; and you will allow me, Sir, that ' the readiness which too many of the laity flow to contemn the order, may be one ' reason of their avoiding too much humi-' lity.' ' Very true indeed,' fays the gentleman; ' I find, Sir, you are a man of ex-' cellent fenfe, and am happy in this oppor-' tunity of knowing you: perhaps our accidental meeting may not be difadvantageous to you neither. At prefent, I shall only ' fay to you, that the incumbent of this ' living is old and infirm; and that it is in ' my gift. Doctor, give me your hand; and · affure yourself of it at his decease.' Adams told him, ' he was never more confounded ' in his life, than at his utter incapacity to ' make any return to fuch noble and un-' merited generofity.' ' A mere trifle, Sir,' cries the gentleman, ' fcarce worth your ac-' ceptance; a little more than three hundred ' a-year. I wish it was double the value for ' your fake.' Adams bowed, and cried from the emotions of his gratitude; when the other asked him, if he was married, or had any children besides those in the spiritual fense he had mentioned. 'Sir,' replied the parson, 'I have a wife and fix at your ser-B b 2

' vice.' 'That is unlucky,' fays the gentleman; ' for I would otherwise have taken ' you into my own house as my chaplain: however, I have another in the parish, (for the parsonage-house is not good enough) which I will furnish for you. Pray, does ' your wife understand a dairy?' 'I can't ' profess she does,' says Adams. ' I am ' forry for it,' quoth the gentleman; I * would have given you half a dozen cows, and very good grounds to have maintained ' them.' ' Sir,' faid Adams, in an ecflafy, ' you are too liberal; indeed you are.' ' Not ' at all,' cries the gentleman, ' I esteem ' riches only as they give me an opportunity of doing good; and I never faw one whom · I had a greater inclination to ferve.' At which words he shook him heartily by the hand, and told him he had fufficient room. in his house to entertain him and his friends. Adams begged he might give him no fuch trouble: that they could be very well accommodated in the house where they were; forgetting they had not a fixpenny piece among them. The gentleman would not be denied, and informing himself how far they were travelling, he faid it was too long a journey to take on foot, and begged that they would favour him, by fuffering him to lend them a fervant and horses; adding withal,

that if they would do him the pleasure of their company only two days, he would furnish them with his coach and fix. Adams, turning to Joseph, faid, ' How lucky is this ' gentleman's goodness to you, who I am ' afraid would be fcarce able to hold out on ' your lame leg!' And then addressing the person who made him these liberal promises, after much bowing he cried out, 'Bleffed be the hour which first introduced me to a man of your charity! you are indeed a · Christian of the true primitive kind, and ' an honour to the country wherein you live. ' I would willingly have taken a pilgrimage ' to the holy land to have beheld you: for ' the advantages which we draw from your ' goodness, give me little pleasure, in com-' parison of what I enjoy for your own fake; ' when I confider the treasures you are by these means laying up for yourself in a country that passeth not away. We will ' therefore, most generous Sir, accept your ' goodness, as well the entertainment you ' have fo kindly offered us at your house ' this evening, as the accommodation of your ' horses to-morrow morning.' He then began to fearch for his hat, as did Joseph for his; and both they and Fanny were in order of departure, when the gentleman stopping short, and seeming to meditate by himself

B b 3

for the space of about a minute, exclaimed thus: 'Sure never any thing was fo unlucky: ' I had forgot that my house-keeper was ' gone abroad, and hath locked up all my ' rooms: indeed I would break them open for you, but shall not be able to furnish ' you with a bed; for she has likewise put ' away all my linen. I am glad it entered ' into my head, before I had given you the * trouble of walking there; besides, I believe vou will find better accommodations here ' than you expected. Landlord, you can ' provide good beds for these people, can't ' you?' 'Yes, and please your worship,' cries the hoft, ' and fuch as no lord or ju-· stice of the peace in the kingdom need be ' ashamed to ly in.' ' I am heartily forry,' fays the gentleman, 'for this disappointment. · I am refolved I will never suffer her to car-' ry away the keys again.' ' Pray, Sir, let ' it not make you uneafy,' cries Adams, ' we · shall do very well here; and the loan of · your horses is a favour we shall be incapable of making any return to.' Ay,' faid the fquire, 'the horses shall attend you here, at what hour in the morning you please.' And now, after many civilities too tedious to enumerate, many squeezes by the hand, with most affectionate looks and smiles at each other, and after appointing the horses

at feven the next morning, the gentleman took his leave of them, and departed to his own house. Adams and his companions returned to the table, where the Parson smoaked another pipe, and then they all retired to rest.

Mr Adams rose very early, and called Jofeph out of his bed, between whom a very
fierce dispute ensued, whether Fanny should
ride behind Joseph, or behind the gentleman's servant; Joseph insisting on it, that
he was perfectly recovered, and was as capable of taking care of Fanny as any other
person could be. But Adams would not
agree to it, and declared he would not trust
her behind him; for that he was weaker
than he imagined himself to be.

This dispute continued a long time, and had begun to be very hot, when a servant arrived from their good friend to acquaint them, that he was unfortunately prevented from lending them any horses; for that his groom had, unknown to him, put his whole stable

under a course of physic.

This advice prefently struck the two difputants dumb; Adams cried out, 'Was' ever any thing so unlucky as this poor gentleman! I protest I am more forry on his account than my own. You see, Jofeph, how this good-natur'd man is treat-

ed by his fervants; one locks up his linen, another physics his horses; and I suppose by his being at this house last night, the butler had locked up his cellar. Blefs us! how good-nature is used in this world! I · protest I am more concerned on his account ' than my own.' ' So am not I,' cries Jofeph: ' not that I am much troubled about walking on foot; all my concern is, how ' we shall get out of the house; unless God fends another pedlar to redeem us. But ' certainly this gentleman has fuch an af-· fection for you, that he would lend you a · larger fum than we owe here; which is ' not above four or five shillings.' Very true, ' child,' answered Adams; ' I will write a · letter to him, and will even venture to io-· licit him for three half-crowns: there will · be no harm in having two or three shillings ' in our pockets; as we have full forty miles to travel, we may possibly have occasion for them.'

Fanny being now rifen, Joseph paid her a visit, and left Adams to write his letter, which having finished, he dispatched a boy with it to the gentleman, and then seated himself by the door, lighted his pipe, and betook himself to meditation.

The boy staying longer than seemed to be necessary, Joseph, who with Fanny was now

returned to the parson, expressed some apprehensions, that the gentleman's steward had locked up his purse too. To which Adams answered, it might very possibly be; and he should wonder at no liberties which the devil might put into the head of a wicked fervant to take with so worthy a master: but added, that as the sum was so small, so noble a gentleman would be easily able to procure it in the parish, though he had it not in his own pocket. 'Indeed,' says he, if it was sour or sive guineas, or any such large quantity of money, it might be a different matter.'

I

t

0

t

)

S

9

1

They were now fat down to breakfast over fome toast and ale, when the boy returned, and informed them, that the gentleman was not at home. ' Very well,' cries Adams; but why, child, did not you flay till his ' return? Go back again, my good boy, and wait for his coming home: he cannot be ' gone far, as his horses are all fick; and be-' fides, he had no intention to go abroad; ' for he invited us to spend this day and to-' morrow at his house: therefore go back, child, and tarry till his return home.' The messenger departed, and was back again with great expedition; bringing an account that the gentleman was gone a long journey, and would not be at home again this month. At

thefe words Adams feemed greatly confounded, faying, 'This must be a sudden accident, as the fickness or death of a relation, or ' fome fuch unforescen misfortune;' and then turning to Joseph, cried, ' I wish you · had reminded me to have borrowed this ' money last night.' Joseph smiling, anfwered, he was very much deceived, if the gentleman would not have found fome excufe to avoid lending it. 'I own,' fays he, ' I was never much pleased with his profesfing fo much kindness for you at first fight; · for I have heard the gentlemen of our cloth in London tell many fuch stories of their masters But when the boy brought the meffage back of his not being at home, · I presently knew what would follow; for whenever a man of fashion doth not care to fulfill his promises, the custom is to order his fervants that he will never be at home to the person so promised. In London they call it denying him. I have my-' felf denied Sir Thomas Booby above an ' hundred times; and when the man hath ' danced attendance for about a month, or ' fometimes longer, he is acquainted in the end, that the gentleman is gone out of ' town, and could do nothing in the business.' ' Good Lord!' fays Adams, ' what wickede ness is there in the Christian world! I

da

it,

or

id

u

is

n-

e

X -

e,

f-

t;

71°

of

ht

2,

or

re

r-

at

1-

7-

n

h

11

ne

of

1-

I.

sprofess almost equal to what I have read of the heathens. But furely, Joseph, your suspicions of this gentleman must be ' unjust; for what a filly fellow must be be, who would do the devil's work for no ' thing? and canst thou tell me any interest he could possibly propose to himself by deceiving us in his proteffions?' 'It is not ' for me,' answered Joseph, ' to give rea-' fons for what men do, to a gentleman of ' your learning.' ' You fay right,' quoth Adams; ' knowledge of men is only to be ' learnt from books; Plato and Seneca for ' that; and those are authors, I am afraid, ' child, you never read.' ' Not I, Sir, 'truly,' answered Joseph; 'all I know is, ' it is a maxim among the gentlemen of our ' cloth, that those masters who promise the ' most perform the least; and I have often. ' heard them fay, they have found the lar-• gest vails in those families where they were ' not promifed any. But, Sir, instead of con! ' fidering any farther these matters, it would ' be our wifest way to contrive some method of getting out of this house; for the gene-' rous gentleman, instead of doing us any ' fervice, hath left us the whole reckoning ' to pay.' Adams was going to answer, when their hoft came in, and with a kind of jeering smile, said, Well, masters! the

· Squire hath not fent his horses for you yet. · Laud help me! how eafily fome folks ' make promises!' ' How!' fays Adams, * have you ever known him do any thing of ' the kind before?' ' Ay, marry have I,' answered the host; 'it is no business of mine, ' you know, Sir, to fay any thing of a gentle-· man to his face; but now he is not here, ' I will affure you he hath not his fellow within the three next market-towns. I own, I could not help laughing, when I heard him offer you the living; for thereby · hangs a good jest. I thought he would have offered you my house next; for one ' is no more his to dispose of than the other.' At these words, Adams bleffing himself, declared, he had never read of fuch a monfter, but what vexes me most,' fays he, ' is, that he hath decoyed us into running up a long debt with you, which we are not able to ' pay; for we have no money about us: and, · what is worse, live at such a distance, that ' if you should trust us, I am afraid you would lofe your money, for want of our finding any conveniency of fending it. 'Trust you, master!' fays the host, 'that I ' will with all my heart; I honour the clergy too much to deny truffing one of them for fuch a trifle; besides, I like your fear of e never paying me. I have lost many a debt

in my lifetime, but was promised to be paid them all in a very fhort time. I will fcore ' this reckoning for the novelty of it. the first, I do assure you, of its kind. what fay you, master, shall we have t'other opot before we part? it will waste but a ' little chalk more; and if you never pay " me a shilling, the loss will not ruin me." Adams liked the invitation very well; especially as it was delivered with fo hearty an accent.-He shook his host by the hand, and thanking him, faid, ' he would tarry another opt, rather for the pleasure of such worthy company, than for the liquor:' adding, ' he was glad to find fome Christians left in ' the kingdom; for that he almost began to ' fuspect that he was sojourning in a country ' inhabited only by Jews and Turks.'

The kind host produced the liquor, and Joseph with Fanny retired into the garden; where, while they solaced themselves with amorous discourse, Adams sat down with his host; and both filling their glasses, and lighting their pipes, they began that dialogue which the reader will find in the next

chapter.

S,

of

e,

2-

e,

V

I

I

d

e

t

VOL. I.

Cc

C H A P. XVII.

A dialogue between Mr Abraham Adams and his host, which, by the disagreement in their opinions, seemed to threaten an unlucky catastrophe, had it not been timely prevented by the return of the lovers.

" CIR,' faid the hoft, ' I affure you, you are not the first to whom our squire hath promifed more than he hath performed. He is fo famous for this practice, that ' his word will not be taken for much by those who know him. I remember a young ' fellow whom he promised his parents to make an exciseman. The poor people, who could ill afford it, bred their fon to writing and accounts, and other learning to qualify him for the place; and the boy held up his head above his condition with these hopes: nor would he go to plough, ' nor to any other kind of work; and went ' constantly dressed as fine as could be, with two clean Holland shirts a-week, and this for feveral years; till at last he followed ' the fquire up to London, thinking there to ' mind him of his promifes; but he could e never get fight of him. So that being out of money and bufiness, he fell into evil company and wicked courfes; and in the

end came to a fentence of transportation, the news of which broke the mother's heart. I will tell you another true flory of him: There was a neighbour of mine a farmer, who had two fons whom he bred ' up to the business. Pretty lads they were: ' nothing would ferve the squire, but that the youngest must be made a parson. Upon which he perfuaded the father to fend him to school, promising that he would afterwards maintain him at the university, and when he was of a proper age give him a ' living. But after the lad had been feven ' years at school, and his father brought him to the squire with a letter from his master, that he was fit for the university; the squire, ' instead of minding his promise, or fending ' him thither at his expence, only told his ' father, that the young man was a fine scho-' lar, and it was pity he could not afford to ' keep him at Oxford for four or five years " more, by which time, if he could get him ' a curacy, he might have him ordained. The farmer faid, he was not a man fuffi-' cient to do any fuch thing. Why then, ' answered the squire, I am very forry you ' have given him fo much learning; for if he cannot get his living by that, it will ra-' ther spoil him for any thing else; and your other fon, who can hardly write his name, Cc2

· will do more at ploughing and fowing, and is in a better condition than he. And indeed fo it proved; for the poor lad not finding friends to maintain him in his · learning as he had expected, and being ' unwilling to work, fell to drinking, tho' he was a very fober lad before; and in ' a short time, partly with grief, and partly with good liquor, fell into a confumption, and died. Nay, I can tell you more still: · there was another, a young woman, and the handsomest in all this neighbourhood, · whom he enticed up to London, promifing ' to make her a gentlewoman to one of your · women of quality: but instead of keeping · his word, we have fince heard, after having · a child by her himfelf, fhe became a com-' mon whore; then kept a coffee-house in · Covent-garden; and a little after died of the French distemper in a goal. I could ' tell you many more stories: but how do ' you imagine he ferved me myself? You must know, S'r, I was bred a sea-faring · man, and have been many voyages; 'till at · last I came to be master of a ship myself, and was in a fair way of making a fortune, when I was attacked by one of those curied " Guardacostas, who took our ships before ' the beginning of the war; and after a fight, wherein I lost the greatest part of my erew,

JOSEPH ANDREWS.

d

1-

ot

is

O

in

ly

n,

1:

d

1,

ır

1-

n

of

d

10

u

at

f,

e,

d

e

my rigging being all demolished, and two ' shots received between wind and water, I was forced to strike. The villains carried off my ship, a brigantine of an hundred and fifty tons, a pretty creature she was, and put me, a man and a boy, into a little bad ' pink, in which, with much ado, we at last made Falmouth; though I believe the ' Spaniards did not imagine she could poffibly live a day at fea. Upon my return ' hither, where my wife, who was of this country, then lived, the squire told me, he was fo pleafed with the defence I had ' made against the enemy, that he did not ' fear getting me promoted to a lieutenantcy of a man of war, if I would accept of it: · which I thankfully affured him I would. Well, Sir, two or three years past, during which I had many repeated promises, not only from the squire, but (as he told me) ' from the lords of the admiralty. He never ' returned from London, but I was affured I might be fatisfied now, for I was certain of the first vacancy; and what surprizes ' me still, when I reflect on it, these affurances were given me with no less confidence, ' after so many disappointments, than at first. ' At last, Sir, growing weary, and somewhat fuspicious after so much delay, I wrote to a friend in London, who I knew

Cc3

had fome acquaintance at the best house in the admiralty, and defired him to back the fquire's interest: for indeed, I feared he · had folicited the affair with more coldness than he pretended .--- And what answer do you think my friend fent me?----Truly, Sir, he acquainted me, that the fquire had · never mentioned my name at the admiralty in his life; and unless I had much faithfuller interest, advised me to give over my pretenfions, which I immediately did; and, with the concurrence of my wife, refolved to fet up an alehouse, where you are heartily welcome: and fo my fervice to you; and may the fquire, and all fuch fneaking rafcals, go to ' the devil together.' ' Oh fie!' fays Adams, oh fie! He is indeed a wicked man; but Gop will, I hope, turn his heart to repentance. Nay, if he could but once fee the meannefs of this detestable vice; would he but once · reflect that he is one of the most scanda-· lous as well as pernicious liars; fure he must despise himself to so intolerable a degree, that it would be impossible for him to continue a moment in such a course. And, to confess the truth, notwithstanding the baseness of this character, which he hath too well deserved, he hath in his countenance fufficient fymptoms of that bona indoles, that sweetness of disposition which

JOSEPH ANDREWS.

furnishes out a good Christian.' 'Ah!

" master, master,' says the host, ' if you had

travelled as far as I have, and converfed

with the many nations where I have traded,

' you would not give any credit to a man's

countenance. Symptoms in his counte-

' nance, quotha! I would look there, per-

haps, to fee whether a man has had the ' fmall-pox, but for nothing elfe.' He fpoke

this with fo little regard to the parfon's obfervation, that it a good deal nettled him; and, taking the pipe haltily from his mouth, he thus answered: 'Master of mine, perhaps I

' have travelled a great deal farther than you,

without the affiltance of a ship. Do you

' imagine failing by different cities or coun-

tries is travelling? No.

Te.

ck he

efs. of

y,

ad

ty

er n-

he

an

e :

he to

IS,

D ce.

fs

ce

aff

e,

to d,

he

th

e-

1:= h

· Calum non animum mutant qui trans mure currant.

' I can go farther in an afternoon than you

' in a twelvemonth. What, I suppose you

have feen the pillars of Hercules, and per-

haps the walls of Carthage. Nay, you may

have heard Scylla, and feen Charybdis;

' you may have entered the closet where Ar-

chimedes was found at the taking Syracuse.

I suppose you have failed among the Cycla-

des, and passed the famous straits which

take their name from the unfortunate Helle,

whose fate is fweetly described by Apollo-' nius Rhodius. You have passed the very fpot, I conceive, where Dædalus fell into that fea, his waxen wings being melted by the fun; you have traverfed the Euxine · fea, I make no doubt; nay, you may have been on the banks of the Caspian, and cal-· led at Colchis, to fee if there is ever another golden fleece.'- ' Not I, truly, mafter,' anfwered the hoft, 'I never touched at any of thefe places.' But I have been at all thefe,' replied Adams. 'Then I suppose,' cries the hoft, 'you have been at the East Indies; for there are no fuch, I will be fworn, either in ' the West or the Levant.' ' Pray where's ' the Levant?' quoth Adams, ' that should be in the East Indies by right.'- ' Oho! ' you are a pretty traveller,' cries the host, and not know the Levant. My fervice to ' you, master; you must not talk of these ' things with me! you must not tip us the ' traveller; it won't go here.' 'Since thou ' art fo dull to misunderstand me still,' quoth Adams, 'I will inform thee; the travelling · I mean is in books, the only way of travel-' ling by which any knowledge is to be ac-' quired. From them I learn what I afferted just now, that Nature generally imprints ' fuch a portraiture of the mind in the countenance, that a skilful physiognomist will

0-

ry

to

by

ne

ve

1-

er

1-

of

le

r

n

S

d

ł,

0

e

11

h

.

•

S

rarely be deceived. I prefume you have ' never read the story of Socrates to this " purpose, and therefore I will tell it you. ' A certain physiognomist afferted of Sorates, that he plainly discovered by his · features that he was a rogue in his nature. A character fo contrary to the teo nour of all this great man's actions, and the ' generally received opinion concerning him, ' incenfed the boys of Athens fo, that they threw stones at the physiognomist, and " would have demolished him for his igno-' rance, had not Socrates himself prevented ' them, by confessing the truth of his obser-' vations, and acknowledging, that though he corrected his disposition by philosophy, ' he was indeed naturally as inclined to vice ' as had been predicated of him. Now, pray refolve me, - How should a man know this ' ftory if he had not read it?' 'Well, ma-' fter,' faid the hoft, ' and what fignifies it ' whether a man knows it or no? He who " goes abroad as I have done, will always have opportunities enough of knowing the ' world, without troubling his head with So-' crates, or any fuch fellows.'-- ' Friend,' cries Adams, ' if a man should fail round ' the world, and anchor in every harbour of ' it, without learning, he would return home

' as ignorant as he went out.' 'Lord help 'you,' answered the host, ' there was my boatfwain, poor fellow! he could fcarce. either write or read, and yet he would na-' vigate a ship with any master of a man of war; and a very pretty knowledge of trade ' he had too.' 'Trade,' answered Adams, as Aristotle proves in his first chapter of politics, is below a philosopher, and unna-' tural as it is managed now.' The host look'd stedfastly at Adams, and after a minute's filence asked him, If he was one of the writers of the Gazetteers? ' for I have heard,' fays he, 'they are writ by parfons.' · Gazetteers!' answered Adams, ' what is "that?" 'It is a dirty news-paper,' replied the hoft, ' which hath been given away all over the nation for these many years, to · abuse trade and honest men, which I would onot fuffer to ly on my table, though it hath been offered me for nothing,' 'Nor I truly,' faid Adams, 'I never write any thing but fer-' mons; and I affure you I am no enemy to trade, whilst it is consistent with honesty; ' nay, I have always looked on the tradefman as a very valuable member of fociety, and e perhaps inferior to none but the man of · learning.' ' No, I believe he is not, nor to him neither,' answered the host. 'Of

f

t

t

JOSEPH ANDREWS. 317

what use would learning be in a country without trade! What would all you par-' fons do to clothe your backs and feed your bellies? Who fetches you your filks, and vour linens, and your wines, and all the other necessaries of life? I speak chiefly with regard to the failors.' You fhould fay, the extravagancies of life,' replied the parfon; ' but admit they were necessaries, there ' is fomething more necessary than life itself, which is provided by learning; I mean the ' learning of the clergy. Who clothes you with piety, meekness, humility, charity, and ' all the other Christian virtues? Who feeds vour fouls with the milk of brotherly love, and diets them with all the dainty food of holiness, which at once cleanses them of all ' impure carnal affections, and fattens them ' with the truly rich Spirit of grace !- Who ' doth this?' ' Ay, who indeed!' cries the hoft; ' for I do not remember ever to have " feen any fuch clothing, or fuch feeding. · And so in the mean time, master, my service to you.' Adams was going to answer with fome feverity, when Joseph and Fanny returned, and pressed his departure so eagerly, that he would not refuse them; and fo grasping his crabstick, he took leave of his hoft, (neither of them being fo well pleafed

312 THE ADVENTURES, &c.

with each other as they had been at their first sitting down together), and with Joseph and Fanny, who had both expressed much impatience, departed, and now all together renewed their journey.

End of VOLUME FIRST.



eir ph ich her